

Chapter 1

Disclaimer Alternative Name: 魔法 机械 修罗 场

Author: zerulr

Category: Chinese web novel, Action, Fantasy, Sci-fi Status: Ongoing

Source: <http://book.sfacg.com/Novel/39230/MainIndex/>

Translator(s)/Translation Group: AlysChu&Co
<http://moonbunnycafe.com/magic-mechanics-shuraba/>

Compiled : Feinzell

<https://wuxiatranslationsdl.wordpress.com>

Description

Sis: "WHAT? Why does the magic academy have such a weird major like Mechanical Engineering?"

Bro: "Uhhhh..... But there is, and I even got accepted into it."

Sis: "But it's still weird!"

Bro: “Aiya, lets not care about such details.”

The two siblings had been accepted into the top magic school, the Augustus Academy. An adventure filled with dreams and a journey like that of the Shuraba will soon follow...

(TL: Shuraba is an arena of Buddhist origins whereby Asura frequently battled with Sakra. Both were jealous over each other as Asura had beautiful women but no food whereas Sakra had good food but no beautiful women.)

There are 2 Volumes which separated by prologue-epilogue:

Volume 1 – Mechanical Magician? Never heard of it before!

Volume 2 – A Mechanical Engineering Magician's Simple Task

Glossary

MMS – Glossary

Characters Ouyang Tao – MC

Ouyang Xue – Tao’s little sister Professor Lu – Ouyang Tao’s guardian/guidance teacher Professor Cologne – dude who doesn’t like commoners

Locations Augustus Academy – magic academy Seaside Magic School – middle school Principality of Ryan – setting

Courses

Common

Elements

Spirits

Natural Magic Feral Beast

Illusions

Heavenly Magic Medicines

Special

Mechanics / Mechanical Engineering department Blacksmithing Magic
Swordsmanship

**Faculty Rankings white – intern grey – teachers in charge of ordinary classes
red cloaks – professors in charge of magic black cloaks – on the Academy
Council**

Chapter 3

Prologue

A beautiful and sunny day could easily turn into harsh winds and raging storms by night. This was the unpredictability of the seas. Even if a ship was 100 metres long and weighed 10000 tons, it still was merely a boat. Within the towering waves, the ship shook continuously. It was as if the next wave could capsize it.

Despite that, humans were creatures who never gave in easily. It did not matter whether they were facing the gods or the demons, what more mere waves and a storm.

The ship pushed on at full speed, going against the headwind. It bashed through a huge oncoming wave and stubbornly continued forward— —that's right, a man's determination could conquer even nature.

Therefore the most terrifying thing in the world was neither a savage and raging storm, nor was it the roaring waves of the sea. It was humanity itself.

Bang, Bang, Bang..... After a series of gunshots, on the bridge of the ship, all the high ranking officers including the captain and his first mate laid in a pool of blood with a bullet shot through the back of their heads— — this was merely the beginning.

In the cabins of the ship, the sound of gunshots and painful cries signified that death and terror was soon approaching. A group of black clothed men held the weapons they had snuck on board and began their massacre, shooting at anyone they saw as they stepped on the flesh and blood of the innocents they killed when searching for their actual target.

In one of those cabins, a couple locked their cabin door from inside and moved all the large furniture in front of the door to block its entrance, in hopes of delaying the approaching footsteps of death.

In the corner of the cabin, a youth around twelve or thirteen was repeatedly calling for help using the communication crystal. Although fear caused his body to tremble uncontrollably, he held the head of the microphone firmly, hoping to relay his message more clearly as he repeated continuously: "This is Ocean Liner SS Poseidon, we are under attack of unidentified men, Mayday....."

But there was no reply from the other end of the communication crystal as all signals had already been hijacked by the attackers.

Boom, Boom, Boom.... The sound of the gun stock knocking the door announced death's arrival. The youth could no longer suppress the fear in his heart and pounced onto his father who was protecting the door with his life. "Ahhhhh! Dad, Mum, I don't want to dieee! Help Helpppppp!"

"It's okay son, it will be fine....." The helpless father said and hugged his son tightly, hoping to calm him down despite knowing that this time, the chances of escape were slim.

The knocking on the door only continued for a little while before stopping. Was it safe already? Obviously, this short lived peace was just an illusion as what followed was.....

BOOM— —! The sound of an explosion. The door was blown open and the impact from the

explosion caused the youth to fly, knocking him against the wall and blurred his consciousness. In his dizziness, he felt a hand holding on to his shoulder....

Volume 1 Chapter 1 – The “Muscle Blockhead” And The “Big Sister”

“Ugh..... Unlucky.... I still wanted to sleep more.....” Despite having a nightmare, the youth appeared to be very calm — if the same nightmare repeats too many times, it would no longer be scary anymore.

The stench of ink greeted the youth as he fully woke up from his dream. He opened his bleary eyes slightly but all he could see was pitch black darkness and a small ray of light. That was because he had placed a book on his face to block off the light.

As he removed the book from his face, the midday sun suddenly became glaring. The youth who had just opened his eyes immediately closed it shut and also blocked his eyes with his hand, only to slowly remove it after a while, displaying a slightly silly expression on his face. Overall he was considered to be quite handsome, but to most people, he gave off a feeling of foolishness.

It was a certain afternoon in June. The youth wore a short sleeved school uniform and shifted the silver coloured metal gloves that hung over his waist. As he slowly sat up, he kneaded his messy hair, opened his eyes once again, and cracked his stiff neck whilst habitually observing his surroundings.

The only magic school in the region was the magic school located on the far side on the seaside village. The school wasn't big and the students were mostly around the ages of 16 or 17. There weren't many students for if you combined the three grades together, their total population would number no more than two hundred people — because a magic school was completely different from a normal school. Not only were its school fees higher, there was also the

prerequisite of having innate talent in order to enter. For the people from this seaside village who were mostly fisherman, it was too high of an obstacle to overcome.

It was now lunch time. The youth was at a part of the lawn at the corner of the school. On the field not too far from him, a group of students were having fun. At this time, everyone seemed to have realized that the youth had woken up and started to gather around him.

Here we go again..... The youth thought to himself.

“Yo, muscle blockhead, you’re already awake.”

“Sleeping in broad daylight, are you daydreaming yet again?”

“That’s right, did you dream that you managed to get into Augustus Academy?”

“Hahahaha..... This blockhead doesn’t even know what we’re talking about.”

The few people that led the group made no attempt to hide their ridicule and sarcasm towards the youth while the rest just laughed along. Among the group, there were students who were in their third year, like the youth. There were also several first year students who recklessly laughed without respect. It was obvious that the youth’s predicament in the school was not pleasant.

Incidentally, the youth’s name was Ouyang Tao, but in the school, he was mostly referred to as the muscle blockhead.

He was much taller and well built than anyone else in the school; compared to the other students, he seemed to be at least three or five years older. Logically speaking, if there was someone like that, he should have been like a big brother figure, but instead, the situation was reversed.

This was because.....

“Oi, muscle blockhead, show us a fireball.”

“You don’t know fireball? An ice arrow works just as well.”

“Hehe, looks to me like a waterball would suit you more, take this!”

As they were talking, a waterball smashed onto Ouyang Tao’s body. The insults have already turned into provocation. If it was the old him, he wouldn’t have hesitated and chased his attacker. If he did that, the people surrounding him would continue insulting him and at the same time escape using magic.

But now, he merely just laughed: “Haha, I can’t release a fireball but I can draw the magic circle for a fireball.”

Once he said that, the surroundings students laughed even louder: “Haha, the muscle blockhead is being stupid again.”

This was the reason why the students mocked Ouyang Tao — — As a student from a magic school, he was unable to cast even the most basic fireball, an entry-level elemental spell.

“You rascals, that’s enough!” Outside the group, a girl suddenly shouted. At the same time, harsh winds suddenly blew without warning, causing the people who had surrounded Ouyang Tao to be blown off their feet. However, the spell had avoided only him, exhibiting her precise control.

“Ahhh! The big sister is here!”

“It’s over, she’s angry!”

“Let’s run!”

The group scattered swiftly, leaving only Ouyang Tao and the girl who save him from his predicament. Ouyang Tao embarrassingly laughed: “Thanks, Ah Xue.”

[TL: Ah in front of a person's name indicates familiarity/kinship.]

The girl in front of Ouyang Tao was Ouyang Xue. Just like her name, she had shiny silver hair and flawless snow white skin. This was even more prominent under the shine of the sun. She was like an elegant princess who had walked out of an ice snow world, exuding an aura of untouchable divinity — only when she was silent.

“Bro, jeez, you got bullied again. Even if you do not retaliate, you should at least speak up! No matter what you have to retaliate, retaliate without mercy, only this way would they no longer dare to bully you.” Once she opened her mouth, her gracefulness immediately disappeared. Furthermore, the now fuming Ouyang Xue was waving around her fist while speaking, quickly revealing her “true nature”.

She was well versed in all the magical elements that were already taught and handled them very skillfully.. Also, being a third year and having a strong personality made her the school's undisputed big sister.

Ouyang Tao merely laughed it off: “Hehe, it's all right, I didn't get injured. Furthermore, I knew you would come help me.”

“Ehh, Bro, you can't stay like that forever. What if I really manage to get into Augustus, who will protect you?”

“Then I can just stay here, look for a job and finance your studies. The estimated costs for your education shouldn't be low right?”

“I don't need that! Bro, you're accompanying me to my exam so at least take a look at the school's admission guide! Not only does Augustus not collect school fees, they also provide monthly financial assistance for students.”

“Woah, that..... sounds pretty good.”

Compared to Ouyang Tao who was weak and had atrocious magical abilities, Ouyang Xue had an extremely strong personality. She was also the school's most

outstanding student who was participating in the country's top magic school, Augustus Academy's entrance exam. She was expected to be accepted into Augustus.

A uselessly weak brother and an exceptionally strong sister; their vast differences made people ponder whether or not they came from the same parents.

Truthfully, they weren't actually blood related siblings. Even Ouyang Tao himself didn't know whether or not his current name and identity actually belonged to him.

Six years ago, on a stormy night, Ouyang Xue's father was out fishing when he was caught in a storm. Coincidentally, he save a youth who fell into the sea. After the youth awoke, he could not remember anything. Hence, Ouyang Xue's father adopted him and named him Ouyang Tao.

"That's why! Bro, you have to work hard too! Then we could be together."

"Then..... Are you going to work at the shipyard for me?"

"Ohhh..." Ouyang Xue pursed her lips together in an unpleased manner and softly muttered: "It's all your fault for working part time, that's why your magic is so weak."

"Hehe, different people specializes in different things." Ouyang Tao picked up the book on the floor and slowly stood up. He was half a head taller than Ouyang Xue. His silliness disappeared as he smiled gently, showing the care and concern of an elder brother. He gently rubbed his sister's small head and spoke: "Lunch break's almost over, let's quickly return back to the classroom."

"Don't rub my head. I'm not a kid anymore." As she said that, the Ouyang siblings returned back to the school's main building.

Whenever it reached this time, Ouyang Xue became worried, agitated and sometimes grumbled quietly.

Ouyang Xue's family was a typical fisherman's family that lived on a meagre income. Needless to say, providing school fees for the magic academy would be difficult for one child, what's more, there were two of them. Therefore, their school fees were all paid by Ouyang Tao's salary from working at the village's shipyard.

Working part time naturally took up a lot of time, therefore, Ouyang Tao frequently took leave from school and skipped lessons. He would go to the shipyard whenever he had time. There was no time for him to practice. It was no surprise his results were bad. That was what Ouyang Xue always thought.

What if I really manage to get into Augustus, I would have to split up with my brother. This made the girl feel very troubled.

However, like what Ouyang Tao had said, each and every person had something different they specialized in..

Volume 1 Chapter 2 – Passed And Passed By Default

Inside the classroom, more than 40 students held books in their hands, and recited a poem about divine myth in unison.

“..... Overconfident, arrogant, ignorant, savage — — That was how the sacred beings used to regard humans. However, nowadays, humans are mocking the gods instead.

This was because humans are still living in this world while the divine beings have all disappeared without a trace. They might have been killed, sealed or exiled — — All of these possibilities might have been caused by humans.

The magic the divine beings were so proud of became the weapon of retaliation used by human beings. They captured hell and broke into heaven. Humans were the victors of the battle, and thus became the controllers of this world.

During the time after human’s victory, angels and demons slowly became a part of the human world. The world that was split in three gradually became one, and everything was progressing in the best direction possible.....”

As described in the epic, humanity obtained victory in a battle against the divine beings. The powerful angels and demons mostly became a part of history while the rest that remained looked to humans as masters, surrendered, and became a part of the human society, in order to continue to live in this world.

Mankind were indeed the victors. However, was everything progressing in the best way? That might not be true, at least to Ouyang Tao, who thought it was worth suspecting — everyday on newspapers, at least one third of the articles talked about conflicts in different places all around the world. How could such a situation be described as the “ideal progress”.

Obviously, the end of the mythical era did not signify the end of conflict. Instead, the lack of a higher entity caused the conflicts of humanity to become more chaotic — of course, Ouyang Tao knew such things were none of his concern. However he sometimes thought about it and felt sad.

Clang, clang, clang..... The school bell suddenly rang. Since lessons had only just started, this was certainly not the end of class, but was...

“Stop, everyone stand up and proceed to gather at the field.” The teacher instructed after hearing the bell. The students immediately closed their books, stood up, and proceeded to leave the classroom in an orderly fashion — this was the school’s emergency gathering bell.

The emergency gathering bell was not used often. Only when something significant happened or during an emergency will it be activated. Hearing the bell during lessons was also very rare, but it signified that something big had happened. Soon, more than two hundred students gathered in front of the podium at the field.

The principal now stood on top of the podium. Different from usual, beside the principal stood a well dressed ambassador. Everyone immediately understood the situation — sending a dedicated ambassador to deliver the admission letter signified that it was from Augustus Academy as only they still hold on to such a tradition. In other words, someone from this seaside village’s magic school had been recruited by the nation’s top academy.

“Dear students, this is an event to be remembered! Because today, someone amongst you, managed to get into Augustus Academy based off your own merit.....” The principal, who was on the podium, already started his long speech. He spoke with excitement and joy between his lines because someone from this inconspicuous school managed to get into Augustus. This was like a phoenix flying out of a chicken coop.

That was fast! It was only last month that I went to the city to take the examinations, I never expected it would be so fast, Ouyang Xue thought. This caused her to be unexpectedly surprised as her heartbeat began to accelerate.

Ouyang Xue was the only person in the entire school who took the examination, so there was no doubt that she was the one that was recruited. Even though the ambassador had not announced the results yet, everyone around Ouyang Xue was giving her signs of admiration and congratulations. The young girl in turn also became more excited.

“Next, the ambassador will announce the letter of admission!” As he ended his long speech, it was finally the main event. The ambassador walked up the podium and opened the envelope containing the letter of admission. He removed the text and read aloud: “Seaside Magic School third year elementary magician Ouyang Xue, ranked number six hundred and forty four in our elemental skills exam and has been granted admission into the Elemental Department of the school. She is to report to our school on the 30th of August. You are hereby notified.”

After the ambassador finished reading, Ouyang Xue hurriedly walked up the stage. Below, everyone was cheering and clapping. There were even shouts of “congratulations big sister!” and the like.

Ouyang Xue used her slightly trembling hands to accept the letter of admission from the hands of the ambassador. She held it with great care, as if she would break it if she didn’t, and repeatedly confirmed the contents of the letter. She was over the moon and extremely excited. To her, this was undoubtedly a major turning point in her life.

After her graduation, she would no longer be fishermen like her parents, and have to earn a meagre income through a tough job like fishing. She would enter a completely different line of career, and her future was bright. How could she not be agitated? Tears of joy filled her eyes.

However, the announcement was not over yet. The ambassador teared open a second letter, and continued to announce: “Seaside Magic School third year trainee student Ouyang Tao, performed outstandingly in our school’s mechanical

engineering examinations and has been granted admission to the Mechanical Engineering Department of our school. He is to report on the 30th of August. You are hereby notified.”

“Ouyang Tao? Muscle Blockhead?!”

“Ehhhhh? What’s going on?”

“Muscle Blockhead has actually been admitted to Augustus Academy, how is this possible?”

This was clearly different from Ouyang Xue’s situation, this news caused a commotion among the students below. Everyone began to discuss about it, unable to believe the news. Not just students, even the teachers found this news unbelievable. They looked at Ouyang Tao with a face of surprised shock.

This was not surprising; how could a lad who could not even conjure up a fireball be admitted to the most prestigious magic school in the country?

The person in question, Ouyang Tao, did not seem like he was going to explain anything and just walked on stage as he smiled widely. As he received the letter of admission from the ambassador, he laughed: “Hehe, I actually got in.”

Ouyang Xue was even more at a complete loss. She rigidly turned towards Ouyang Tao: “Bro…… Bro you…… You…. When did you……”

“When I followed you to the examination, I secretly signed up, hehe.” Ouyang Tao continued to laugh, as if it was a joke shared between the siblings.

“Then why didn’t you tell me beforehand!”

“Uhhh… About this, it’s because I’m different from you, and I wasn’t entirely confident that I would pass. Lets say I told you beforehand but didn’t get in, wouldn’t it be very embarrassing? Hehe.”

“But..... But.....” Ouyang Xue took a few deep breaths, and continuously reminded herself to calm down. This was a good thing, she should be happy for her brother; but suddenly, she felt that something wasn’t right. “Wait, why would a magic academy have such a weird major like Mechanical Engineering?”

Not only Ouyang Xue, even Ouyang Tao himself found that to be strange. Why would the top magic academy have mechanical engineering as a major, when it was completely unrelated to magic? “Uhhh..... But there is, and I even got accepted into it.”

“But it’s still so weird!”

“Aiya, lets not care about such details.”

“Furthermore, why does your admission letter not have your admission ranking?”

“About that..... That’s probably because I’m the only one who went for the exam? Hehe....” That phrase from Ouyang Tao seemed like he divulged a “truth”.

Only one person participated in the examination, so getting admitted was no surprise. The sounds of booing came from below the stage.

“Tch, what? He was actually just lucky.”

“Next year I’m going to go for this too!”

“Seems like fortune does in fact, favor the foolish.”

“The admission notice has already been delivered. The other details are inside the letter. Congratulations the two of you.” After finishing his mission, the ambassador shook hands with the siblings before leaving. However, to this Seaside Magic School, or rather to the whole village, the celebration has barely started.”

The principal immediately ordered the news to be spread. After a few words of joy and congratulations, he announced that the whole school shall commemorate this day and even gave them a three day vacation.

After that, Ouyang Xue was suppose to address the school with a speech, but at that time, Ouyang Xue's originally happy expression was suddenly hidden behind a thick mask of shadow.

"Ouyang Xue, can you please share some of your thoughts with us? Ouyang Xue?"

"Hmm? Ahhhh! What?" The principal shouted for a few times before Ouyang Xue regained her senses. At this time, her face changed, and completely lost her previous glow. However, everybody present had not realized it yet.

"Please share your thoughts."

"Ohh, I..... That..... I....." Ouyang Xue walked up the podium and stuttered, unable to complete a sentence. Everyone thought she was too excited, so therefore, they continued to give her their undivided attention as they awaited her speech.

"Wahhhhhhhhhh..." Ouyang Xue cried out before turning around, her hands clutching her face, and quickly ran off. The atmosphere suddenly became awkward.

Seeing the situation, Ouyang Tao tried to salvage the situation: "Ahhh... Everyone, my apologies, it appears my sister might have been too happy, shall I say a few words in her place?"

"If it's the Muscle Blockhead, forget it."

"Why are you still foolishly standing there!"

"That's right, hurry up and go find big sister!"

The student's attitude could easily be understood. Ouyang Tao continued smiling, and asked the principal: "That..... Principal, you see....."

The principal was also very understanding: "Go quickly, don't get into trouble."

"Ah, thank you." As he was saying that, Ouyang Tao turned around towards the direction his sister ran off in and gave chase.

Ouyang Tao was naturally aware of the reason why Ouyang Xue's attitude had undergone such a huge change.

Volume 1 Chapter 3 – An Enrollment With Many Twists And Turns

Although humans defeated the sacred beings and became rulers of the world, those that were strong only existed in small numbers. To the majority of other human beings, controlling magic was still a difficult and dangerous skill.

At the same time, to avoid the abuse of magic, every country adopted strict laws to control the amount of magicians and the teaching of magic. Raising the requirements of entry was one of such methods.

Therefore, no matter the grade, any school teaching magic had strict requirements and expensive school fees to admit a student. Even a small inconspicuous school, like the one the Ouyang siblings studied in, charged as expensive as fifty thousand bronze coins for one term — equivalent to two years of income from the Ouyang family.

If it weren't for Ouyang Tao's high income from his part time job, Ouyang Xue would never have had the chance to study magic.

However, high investments naturally yielded high returns. Once the studies were complete, a magician could be hired for various jobs, to receive high income. Furthermore, a graduate from a school like Augustus Academy could earn up to several hundred silver coins yearly. (1 silver = 1000 bronze)

This was also why Ouyang worked so hard to get into Augustus. With an income like that, her elderly parents would no longer need to go out to sea to fish and could enjoy their retirement. Her brother would also no longer need to continue to work at the shipyard. He could concentrate on studying and train to

be a proper magician.

Now however, Ouyang Xue who should be celebrating her dream come true was instead hiding behind a small hill near school, sobbing.

She gripped the admission letter tight. Due to her excess use of strength, the admission letter had already been crumpled. She was eyeing one piece of paper — Augustus Academy new student admission administrative procedures

The most heart wrenching thing was not because her dreams were shattered, but because her dreams were just in front of her, yet she could not grasp the opportunity. At this point, Ouyang Xue sobbed: " Why..... Why is it like this..... Sniff sniff....."

Elemental department new students required a deposit of ten thousand silver coins — such an amount was astronomical to the people living in seaside village.

According to the explanation of things to take note of, if during the school term, a student dropped out, got expelled, or passed away in an accident, the sum will be fully refunded. However, in the event the student successfully graduates and completes two years of assigned work, five times the original sum would be refunded. If a student is unable to pay the sum on time, it would be taken that the student had given up their qualification.

It was obvious that the struggle to enter Augustus Academy was for money, and she had already been granted entry, but in the end, she was unable to enroll due to money. This was such an irony.....

"Despicable..... I already worked so hard....." Ouyang Xue became irritated. For the examination, she put in all her effort, spent more than fifteen hours each day to practice magic and learn theory — that was already all that she could do.

Now however, when she was about to reap her rewards, she was presented with such a difficult situation. She was not only sad, but also felt hatred growing inside of her.

From this rule, it was not difficult to see that Augustus did not actually care about money. It acted as an invisible filter, removing ordinary peasants like her from the school.

Everyone knew that the world was not fair. Similarly, magic wasn't fair either. The privilege of magic belonged to the wealthy, and it could be said that it was the tool used to protect their benefits.

"Bastard..... Bastard! Bastard! Bastard!" The more Ouyang Xue thought, the more angry she became, the more hatred she felt, eyeing the points of note again. Then she suddenly lost it. She tore the letter in her hand. "What's the use of keeping this — — !"

The letter of admission that was regarded as treasure just a while ago turned into a pile of scraps; torn away by Ouyang Xue, they slowly scattered away. However, she still felt unsatisfied, and conjured up a fireball in her hands.....

"Oi, what are you doing!" A pair of strong hands caught hold of Ouyang Xue's wrist, stopping her rash behavior.

Ouyang Xue knew this was not a stranger but her brother, Ouyang Tao. Only he knew where she would hide when she felt unhappy.

"Jeez, what are you doing? You still need the letter to report to school." Ouyang Tao said as he bent down and started picking the pieces of torn paper. Ouyang Xue caught hold of her brother's arm in an attempt to stop him.

"....." Ouyang Xue did not talk. She merely looked at her brother with tears in her eyes, shaking her head sadly, as if signifying that all this no longer had a purpose.

"What's wrong? What happened? Weren't you just fine a while ago? Didn't you work so hard just so you could get into Augustus Academy?"

"Bro..... Bro..... I..... I..... Wuwahhhhh — — !" Ouyang Xue suddenly pounced onto her brother, crying even harder. She guessed that her brother must not have

read the points to note yet.

However, when Ouyang Tao opened his mouth, he startled her. “Don’t cry, don’t cry, let me guess, you were worried about the deposit right?”

“Ehh? Bro..... You read that?”

“Of course I read it. I also gained admission. At the very least, I had to read the rules, hehe.”

“Then..... Then.....” Ouyang Xue saw that he was still smiling, smiling like how he normally was — — smiling sillily like how he normally was. See her brother’s smile, Ouyang Xue felt that she also received some of his positivity and stopped crying.

Subsequently, she realised she was hugging her brother initiatively. Although they were siblings, the bore no blood relations. She immediately turned red in embarrassment, pushed him away, and loudly said: “Then how could you still laugh!”

Ouyang Tao still continued to smile, and whipped out a piece of paper from his uniform pocket like magic and placed it in his sister’s hands. “Don’t worry, look what this is.”

“This..... This is.....” Ouyang Xue looked at what was in her hands and her expression suddenly turned rigid. It was a cheque from the local bank, valued at ten thousand silver coins.

The money seemed as if it had dropped from heaven and without a doubt, it was very important to Ouyang Xue, but..... “Wait, bro where did you get this money? You couldn’t have....”

“Don’t misunderstand. This isn’t my money.” Seeing his flustered sister, Ouyang Tao immediately explained: “Actually, it’s about time I told you. All this years, our school fees were provided by a benefactor.”

“Benefactor? Wasn’t it the money you got from working at the shipyard?”
Ouyang Xue blinked her eyes in confusion.

“Aiya, my small bit of income, at the most could only pay for our daily expenses. Actually, our school fees were paid by an engineer at the shipyard. It was just that he refused to divulge his name. That’s why I kept it from you. This time he specifically prepared the deposit for you…… Aiyo.”

Halfway through hearing this, Ouyang Xue angrily gave her brother a kick.
“Bro, how could you be like this? Such a big matter you should have told me. At least let me thank him in person!”

“I already said, he refused to divulge his identity. What’s more, he already left the shipyard for other places.”

“What! You’re so silly bro!” Accepting another’s kindness for so long yet not having the opportunity to thank her benefactor in person, made Ouyang Xue felt very guilty. She was also angry at her brother’s indignant attitude so her small fists repeatedly punched her brother.

“Okay okay, if you want to thank him or repay him, wait until you graduate.”
Ouyang Tao was still laughing until a sudden gust of wind blew the pieces of torn paper away. “Oh no, let’s hurry pick it up. If it’s gone we’ll be in trouble!”

“Ahhhh, hurry!” Ouyang Xue immediately reacted, and went to pick up the torn pieces of paper from her surroundings. Her anger also disappeared as quickly as the wind that came.

Volume 1 Chapter 4 – The Money Tree Of The Shipyard

After helping his sister collect all the scattered pieces of torn admission letter, Ouyang Tao kept all of them, preparing to find time to fix it back. At this point, Ouyang Xue was gradually feeling better. Hence, they went back to school together.

At that time, the news that the siblings have been granted admission to Augustus had already spread. Everyone came to the school to congratulate them and also to take a look at the first Genius Magical Girl in a hundred years.

Once Ouyang Xue appeared, people immediately crowded around her which caused her to panic. She began asking for help from the people around her: “Bro, I..... I..... Eh? ”

However, Ouyang Tao had already disappeared without a trace.

Five to six kilometres from the school sat the source of three-quarters of the village’s taxes — the shipyard.

The shipyard was not only big, it had all the necessary facilities. The crane and dock at the shore could be seen in the distance. There were also four platforms for boats and two large sized docks in the shipyard. The small sized hundred tonnes powerboats used to navigate through the river to the ten thousand tonnes cruiser that used to deliver goods between countries and even battleships could be produced here — It was hard to imagine a rundown village by the seaside had the necessary facilities to produce such ships.

However, the most special thing about the shipyard was not just this; it was that no matter how rushed the orders were, it could be easily completed. The secret to this laid with Ouyang Tao.

He did not join his sister in the celebratory activities because he was certain that the large amounts of activities prepared were for his sister and it would not concern him. What's more, he had more pressing matters to attend to.

After signing in, he changed into his work clothes, wore his safety helmet, pinned on his "Chief Engineer" work tag and wore his metal gloves on his left hand before leaving the changing room. He bypassed the showroom and went to his workplace. On his journey, the people working no matter how busy, after seeing him greeted him warmly.

"Yo, Ah Tao, you're early today!"

"Yeah, hehe."

"Ah Tao, I heard that you siblings both got admitted, congratulations!"

"Nah, I'm just lucky, hehe."

"Boss is at dock number four waiting for you. He's worried enough to almost cry! Haha."

"Aiya, then i better rush over."

It looked like Ouyang Tao's first job of the day began at dock number four. He rushed over and as expected, a large amount of material for the construction of a ship laid there, waiting for Ouyang Tao to start work.

"Yo, Ouyang Bro, you're finally here!" The boss of the shipyard was a middle-aged man with a potbelly, dressed in a suit. Seeing the arrival of Ouyang Tao, he immediately welcomed him. "For your information, this order is very urgent, representatives are collecting it in three hours."

“What type of ship?” Ouyang Tao said as he reached out his hands. The workers at the side immediately passed him the work request and the blueprints.

“Two five thousand tonnes powerboat, deadline in half a day. People are paying three times the amount. Ouyang Bro, are you able to settle it?” The fat boss said showing three fingers to Ouyang Tao and swaying them.

Ouyang Tao did not reply immediately but instead looked carefully at the blueprints and work request, memorised them, before nodding: “Do we have enough materials?”

“Of course!”

“Okay then, leave it to me.”

“Good good, Ouyang Bro’s going to start work, everyone make way.” The fat boss said as he allowed the workers to scatter for Ouyang Tao to start work.

Ouyang Tao closed his eyes, drawing the magical circle for the construction of the ship, and at the same time, using his magic powers on the materials places at the side.

Soon, a bunch of magic arrays appeared one after another, on top of each of the materials. Each magical array acted like a mini factory, melting, refining, molding and constructing the parts and resources required for the construction of the ship.

Now, a light ball constructed by numerous magic array appeared on his left hand. It was the control of all the procedures for constructing the ship. His right hand went into the light ball and controlled the ship’s construction.

At the same time, there was one magical array each, at the ends of the ship. It was slowly moving to the centre following the movement of the array that was producing the frame of the ship. Following which, the finished parts were being shifted to the frame piece by piece, instantaneously completing the assembling

and welding. The structure of the ship was soon completed.

Lastly, the finished interior of the ship was fitted with the necessary infrastructure piece by piece. In a short span of minutes, the middle sized ship was completed.

Even though Ouyang Tao only needed such a short amount of time to complete a project that needed two months, he really was a muscle blockhead who could not even conjure out a simple fireball.

That was weird but it did not matter to Ouyang Tao. To him, this proved a point he was always talking about — everyone has their own individual specialties and therefore are also weaker at certain things.

When the finished ship was lowered from the platform, Ouyang Tao had already quickly completed the construction of another one. To him, this was work and also how he could earn school fees for him and his sister. The owner of the shipyard paid him generously for his work.

“I’m done, just a final check and there shouldn’t be any problems.” The work here was finished but Ouyang Tao’s work was not done. “Boss, I’m off to the next dock.”

Other than helping the shipyard with the urgent orders, he also helped in the designing of other ships’ controls and technical aspects of some of the more important parts. He was indeed the chief engineer of the shipyard.

Because of his position, Ouyang Tao could use any of the machinery in the shipyard. With this, he could create some small inventions while working, earning some extra money — as he already knew about the deposit prerequisite for Augustus Academy, he has all along been preparing for it.

“Eh, Ouyang Bro, stop your work, come, come sit here with me.” Today, the fat boss had some other things to talk to Ouyang Tao about, as he dragged Ouyang Tao to his office.

The boss's office was located at the third storey of the shipyard. After entering the office, the boss immediately shut the door and closed the curtains. "Bro, don't just stand there, sit anywhere, let me get you a drink."

It was not difficult to see that the boss was very courteous to Ouyang Tao, even to the extent of calling him his brother. This was because, Ouyang Tao was the money tree of the shipyard.

The boss was the same as always, while attending to Ouyang Tao, he served him ice cold beverages. Ouyang Tao knew this was a sign that the boss had a request for him. As expected, after exchanging some words, the boss went to the main topic: "Ouyang Bro, I heard you siblings both got into Augustus Academy, congratulations."

"Hehe, mine was pure luck. My sister is the real hardworking one." Ouyang Tao merely smiled as he guessed the intentions of the boss.

"Alas, but with you leaving, my shipyard would lose its right hand man. Seeing that we would be able to bid for the military orders next year, I....." The fat boss sounded worried — the money tree was leaving, how could one not be worried.

But, Ouyang Tao replied unexpectedly quickly: "No worries, there are school holidays. I can come back and help for three months each year."

Hearing this, the fat boss was overjoyed: "Really?"

"Yup, boss you helped me with alot these few years, what's more, during our studies, we would probably still need more money."

"Ohhh..... Ah! Yes, that's right! You still need money next time." It was as if the boss suddenly remembered something. He took out a cheque and shoved it into Ouyang Tao's hands. "Here, it isn't much but it's a gift for you."

"Okay, thank you." Ouyang Tao did not reject it and accepted it readily. "I'm off to the docks."

“Sure, take care bro, take care.”

Seeing Ouyang Tao coming out of the office, the people who were watching him shook their heads and sighed.

“This silly guy probably got sweet talked by boss again.”

“I cannot take it anymore, everytime he just gives him eight hundred to a thousand silver to shut him up.”

“Sigh, it’s always the good kind that’s taken advantage of.....”

That’s right, almost everyone working knew that the boss was taking advantage of Ouyang Tao. People even reminded him but he always smiled and said “it’s ok, it does not matter” casually ending the topic. It was like he did not care.

Actually he did not care about how much money there was, he only worried about whether he could pay for his sister’s education.

Volume 1 Chapter 5 – Frolicking Around On The Train

Time flew by and after the blink of an eye, the end of August had already arrived. Because of the long distance, the siblings departed a few days in advance towards Augustus Academy, which was located at the capital.

On their day of departure, all of the villagers turned up to send them on their journey. In the midst of loud drumming and blessings, Ouyang Tao and Ouyang Xue embarked on a journey for knowledge.

On the train that was bound for the capital, Ouyang Xue was a little excited, because Augustus Academy students who showed their ID could ride transportation vehicle for free. Because of that, Ouyang Xue naturally chose the first class seats for their softness and freshness.

Unlike before, where they were packed together like sardines as they only bought standing tickets to save money, the first class cabin was beautifully decorated, with a constant, cool temperature.

The siblings chose a large, two person compartment. To each side was a folding bed, and towards the window was a nightstand and folding table, with a button to call room service right above it. Next to the door, there was a small refrigerator, and a TV was mounted on the wall. The facilities were very complete. It even had a small showering room.

Entering the room, Ouyang Xue immediately took off her shoes, lunged onto a bed, and began to roll. Upon finding the bed was quite soft, Ouyang Xue soon began to happily jump up and down on the bed. “Wow! Bro, this bed is so soft

and springy!”

Hehe, look how happy you are.” Upon seeing his sister’s expression that was full of vitality, Ouyang Tao was secretly very satisfied. He put away the luggage, and quietly sat down, as he smiled at his sister.

After jumping on the bed some more, Ouyang Xue opened up the nightstand, and upon seeing that there was nothing in there, her interest shifted towards the small refrigerator next to the door: “Brother, there’re a lot of beverages in here, may I drink one?”

“Mn, but you have to take note, only the ones that don’t have the price tags on them are free.”

“Oh, understood.” Ouyang Xue took a while before making her decision. “I want the orange juice. What about you, brother?”

“Chocolate milk.”

Afterwards, Ouyang Xue quieted down for a bit. While watching the scenery pass by, she sat on the side of the bed, humming a song as she cheerfully swung her legs to and fro while sipping the bottled fruit juice.

For Ouyang Xue, this was her second time leaving the village, but her mood was drastically different than the first time when she was under the pressure of having to take a test. This time around, she could appreciate and take in the new and magical world outside the village; a view that many villagers could not see.

In comparison, Ouyang Tao’s expression was much calmer, because although he doesn’t recall any of his past identity or experiences, he could faintly feel that he had once gone through these experiences before.

How was he like in the past? How did this accident happen? If there was no accident, what would his living conditions be right now? His lost memories may never recover, but this did not stop Ouyang Tao from thinking about his past.

“Bro, what happened? Are you unhappy?”

The Ouyang Tao who was almost lost in his own thoughts, quickly turned his attention back to reality: “Mm? No, it’s just that ... hehe, it’s just that I never would have thought that I would be admitted, and can continue to be together with Ah Xue.”

“Hehe, you’re right, I would never have thought that it would happen either.” Ouyang Xue blissfully smiled as she lowered her head. In her heart, “being admitted into Augustus Academy” and “staying together with Brother” were of equal importance. She once hesitated to no end over whether or not she should separate from her brother.

It’s a mystery as to which sibling heaven had favored, as Ouyang Xue would never have dreamed that she would be able to stay together with her brother like this.

Suddenly, the room quieted down as the siblings were immersed within a quiet and delicate atmosphere.

But at this time, Ouyang Tao spoke a sentence that shattered the mood. “However, it is impossible for Ah Xue to be with me together.”

Ouyang Xue started at him blankly for a moment, then blinked a few times in surprise. “Ah? Why?”

“Because sooner or later, Ah Xue will get married in the future, heh-heh.”

“What! Bro, what nonsense are you spouting? I would never just casually marry someone! No way!” Ouyang Xue’s face suddenly flushed red as she shook her head fiercely in denial and incessantly shook her hands.

Originally, he merely wanted to tease his sister, but he didn’t imagine that she would have such a huge reaction. He couldn’t help but follow the joke until the end: “Alright, alright, well even if Ah Xue doesn’t marry, your brother here would eventually take a bride.”

“What... Bro, you... No! I... So annoying! Humph!”

“Aiya...”

Originally it was meant to come out as just a joke, yet Ouyang Xue seemed to be very irritated. Her mood suddenly became very agitated, and her speech incoherent. Finally in frustration, she threw her empty bottle in Ouyang Tao’s face, buried herself underneath the covers, and refused to come out

“Uh... it seems like the joke went too far...” Ouyang Tao bitterly smiled. Whenever she buried her head within the covers wordlessly and soundlessly, it was a sign that she was angry.

Although to outsiders looking on, Ouyang Xue seemed like a girl that was strong of character with the aura of a genius female magician, but intrinsically, she was like any other ordinary girl. She also had times where she would get angry, and times when she wanted to be spoiled or be loved.

After waiting for a while, Ouyang Tao guessed that his sister’s emotions had settled down a bit, and then approached her: “Ah Xue, are you still angry?”

“Humph!” There was no reply, only a muffled “humph” came out from under the covers.

“Well, it was just a joke. I admit I was wrong, ok?”

“Humph! As if I’ll believe you.”

After the coaxing had little effect on her, Ouyang Tao put on a slightly harsher tone: “If you don’t come out, I’ll get angry.”

“Guu...” After staying silent for a while, Ouyang Xue finally spoke up. “So what if you get angry, I ... I’m not afraid of you.”

“Is that really so? I’ll count to three; if you don’t come out, I’ll start spanking.”

“You... you dare!”

“One, two, —“

“Ah, fine, fine, I give in.” Ouyang Xue quickly crawled out from underneath the covers, and then meekly sat there, but her mouth still showed the vestiges of a pout; she was clearly still somewhat angry. “So annoying, it’s the same trick every time...”

To Ouyang Tao, as long as his sister came out from underneath the covers, then the situation had turned for the better: “Hehe, well, don’t be so angry, it was my fault for making such an insensitive joke. Ah Xue is a reasonable person, so you’ll forgive your brother, right?”

“Uuu... I’m reluctant... but I’ll forgive you.” In fact, Ouyang Xue at most was only thirty percent angry, the rest was just her acting spoiled in front of her brother. After seeing her brother apologize so seriously, she instead felt embarrassed. “However, as compensation, you have to treat me to some good food!”

Ouyang Tao readily agreed to her request: “Alright. At noon, I’ll treat you to a great feast, is that OK?”

“Mn, Bro’s the best!”

Upon seeing a lively smile once again grace his sister’s face, Ouyang Tao felt very satisfied. Each time this occurred, he would always think that perhaps the memories from the decade past was not important as long as he held onto the present.

However, he still could not discern the true reason why his sister became angry.

“There’s obviously no blood relation...” Ouyang Xue whispered quietly.

Volume 1 Chapter 6 – Big Academy, Big Differences

After several days on the road, the Ouyang siblings arrived at the country capital one day in advance. After resting for a full day at the inn, they arrived at their destination on the second day — Augustus Magical Academy of Advanced Studies.

The Academy was not located in the city but on the outskirts. It was more than ten kilometres away from the city. Once they left the city, there were not many vehicles on the road. The sides of the road were wilderness. There were neither villages nor were there crops. This made the road seem even more deserted.

According to the driver, the large plot of wilderness belonged to Augustus Academy and was actually a training area located out of school. However nobody knew its actual purpose. After driving for about another hour, the silhouette of Augustus Academy finally appeared in their line of sight.

The Academy appear to be much different from their imagination. From far, the whole academy looked like a gigantic fortress, surrounded by thick and tall walls. It was impossible to see what was inside. Slightly in front of them laid a gantry blocking their path.

“I can only send you till here, someone will fetch you from here.” The driver stopped his vehicle before the gantry saying. Thus the siblings alighted and walked towards the gantry.

At the gantry, security was strict. There were twenty armed guards stationed there. The guard on duty approached and stopped the siblings as soon as he saw

them approaching: “Stop! Display your credentials.”

This was the first time Ouyang Xue saw such a formation and she dodged back in fear. However, Ouyang Tao calmly took out the admissions notice and identification cards and passed it over to the guard: “We are new students reporting today. This is the recruitment letter and our magician license.”

The guard looked at the documents and pointed to Ouyang Xue letter asking: “Why was this piece torn?”

“Hehe, this..... I’m sorry. It was caused by our cat at home. This shouldn’t affect anything I hope.” Ouyang Tao fabricated a reason to trick the guard.

After repeatedly checking their documents and checking their names with the namelist, the guard returned them their documents and opened the gantry. “Welcome to the Academy. There will be a car in front to send you in.”

At this time, the sounds of a horse rapidly galloping became louder and louder. Soon, the figure of a girl riding a high-headed cyborg horse appeared in their vision. Seeing this, the guards in the gantry immediately tensed up and everyone gathered in front of the gantry. They stood in two neat lines, and stood as if they were welcoming her.

The riding girl just passed through the gantry without looking at the guards. It was as if it was logical for them to do it.

However, this caused Ouyang Xue to get annoyed. “Why don’t you need to check her identification?”

“That’s the daughter of Marquis Jacqueline, the prime minister.” A guard replied shortly. “Okay, the car to send you in is inside. Just go in.”

“Tch, she’s just nobility.” Ouyang Xue muttered softly.

“Okay, why get angry at such a small matter. Let’s go.” Ouyang Tao touched his sister’s forehead gently and smiled. He knew that his sister was extremely

sensitive about the nobles and it could be said that she held a certain hatred towards them.

As the vehicle that drove the new students continued forward, Augustus Academy became clearer and clearer in the eyes of the siblings. Just like what they saw from far, the school was surrounded by walls — — no, they were thick and tall steel walls. On top of them were cannons and patrolling guards. It was indeed a big fortress, very different from the image of a school.

When thinking about this country being named the Principality of Ryan, it has always been called the “country without an army”. This was very different from what the siblings saw.

The Principality of Ryan was situated in the east. It was built during the chaotic times of war and conflict when migrants from the west escaped what was once a mythical era in the past. The country’s most unique point was that it did not have a peacetime defence force. Therefore it was always known by the world as the peace seeking “army-less country”.

In fact, the Principality of Ryan had a population of four hundred million people and took up a huge territory of nearly five million square kilometres of land. However, they only had light duty equipment for the thirty thousand armed police to maintain peace and order in the country and ten thousand for the allied magic squad to uphold peace and do their missions. Therefore they were a one of a kind country in the world.

As a result, the sight of the school’s great fortress caused Ouyang Tao’s heart to shudder with unrest.

After passing through the walls, they entered the main part of the school. The view that was presented to them was completely differently from what they saw outside.

On the two sides of the road were young growing trees and a flat grassland. It made a person feel comfortable and relaxed. Following the path were buildings and laboratories of different styles. Students in different uniforms who carried books would be frequently seen. Further down the path were a row of neatly

arranged student dormitories

“Wah, how amazing! Like my imagination..... No, even better than what I imagined.” These facilities were what the seaside village could never ever possess. Thinking about the fact that she was going to study at a place with such advanced facilities made Ouyang Xue unable to conceal her excitement.

Ouyang Tao however, felt a strange sense of familiarity towards his surroundings. He felt as though he had been here before.

Soon, the car arrived at a small field in front of the administrative building. This was the reporting point for new students. The various faculties of the school set up their reception point there. Soon the siblings found the elemental department counter — it had the longest queue among all the faculties.

At the corner of the field, there were three new reception point that were exceptionally vacant. They were the Mechanical Engineering department, the Magical Sword department and the Blacksmithing department.

Seeing the situation at hand, Ouyang Tao decided to accompany his sister's queue first. They handed over the deposit fee, completed the administrative documents, obtained the student pass, school badge and other necessities. Ouyang Xue was then led by the staff to her dormitory. After that, Ouyang Tao proceeded to the Mechanical Engineering department's reception point.

After completing the enrollment procedures, a staff wearing a name tag brought Ouyang Tao to his dormitory.

The student that led the way wore thick square spectacles. He was slightly short and appeared thin and weak. He gave off the feeling of a weak bookworm. Although he was most likely a senior, he seemed much younger than Ouyang Tao.

After walking a few steps, Ouyang Tao found that the direction in which they walked in was strange: “Eh? Sorry to bother you, but isn't the dormitory at that side?”

“Ah, that’s the normal students dormitories, you belong to the Mechanical Engineering dormitory located at the other side.”

“Oh, so that’s how it is.....” Bored at having nothing to do, Ouyang Tao started a conversation with the student leading him. “Why does the Mechanical Engineering department and the other two departments seem so empty?”

“You don’t know? Mechanical Engineering, Magical Swordsmanship and Blacksmithing are the three special departments. They only admit a maximum of ten people each year and only accept the best of the best, even if it meant that they would end up without anyone to teach.

“So strict.....” Although Ouyang Tao realised that the entry criteria were strict when he took the examination, he didn’t expect this unexpected degree of strictness.

“Of course; speaking of which, you didn’t know of all that?”

“Uh..... Hehe, truthfully speaking, I’m not very clear about all this.”

“Ahh, I know!” The leading student looked as if he had a sudden revelation. “It couldn’t be that you are the legendary student. The only commoner student to be admitted into the Mechanical Engineering department in close to fifty years?”

Truthfully speaking, Ouyang Tao felt that although the student bore no enmity, the emphasis of the fact that he was a commoner..... made him uncomfortable. If his sister was here, she would probably stomp away.

Ouyang Tao simply just smiled: “This..... Yeah, it’s probably me.”

“Woah, pleased to meet you.” The leading student’s attitude suddenly became more serious and he bowed in respect to Ouyang Tao.

“Don’t..... Don’t be like that, I feel embarrassed like this.” The leading student’s reaction caused Ouyang Tao to be at a loss, and he quickly helped the guy up. “What’s more, I wanted to ask since just now, you’re my senior, why are

you always using a respectful figure of speech?”

“That’s because you are from the Mechanical Engineering department. There are still places in the future where I need your help.”

“That..... Ahh, Okay, just tell me if you need help.” Ouyang Tao replied with good manners. Thinking about it, Ouyang Tao felt that their role in the conversation was reversed.

This also made Ouyang Tao feel that his future life in Augustus might not be as simple as he thought...

Volume 1 Chapter 6.5 – Interval #2

The freshman reception area was located just in front of the administration building. Therefore, the progress of the student admissions could clearly be seen from on top of the administration building. The young professor was standing at his window in front of his desk, as if quietly waiting for something.

He was the one who argued aggressively and was determined to help Ouyang Tao gain admission. He also became his guardian and voluntarily became his guidance teacher. He was the Professor Lu who would be in charge of Ouyang Tao's studies for the next six years.

Despite assuring the Council that he would be his guardian, the young professor was still nervous. After all, this was a huge responsibility, so he was anxious to find out what the commoner student was like.

"He's here....." Finally, the young professor saw the new student who headed towards the Mechanical Engineering department.

The Mechanical Engineering department had only admitted five students this year and the other four were granted entry much earlier. This was not weird because Augustus Academy's three special department's recruitment was usually done in this way. Naturally, there was a reason for doing it in this manner.

Every year, the professors of the three special departments go all around the country to find and invite talents who satisfied the requirements for the courses. Granting admission was only decided after numerous examinations and investigations.

Among the three, the Mechanical Engineering department's recruitment was even more strict. On the outside, commoners also had the right to take the examination. However, the entry requirement was too strict and usually, only a few members of the larger nobility families around the country were accepted. This was because a Mechanical Engineering mage was also a Battle mage.

The youth's professor felt that he did not know what kind of field he was getting himself into. From his actions and expressions, he probably did not have any experience in combat. He even looked slightly silly.

The young professor gently shook his head: "Tsk tsk..... Looks like this won't be easy."

However, he had a sense of familiarity towards the youth. He felt as if he had known him before..... As if he was someone from his memory, an important person.

The young professor picked up a photo from his work desk. It was a photo from ten years ago that he took with someone. That person was a middle aged man that was past fifty. His appearance was similar to that of Ouyang Tao. Both people in the photo wore the dark purple professor robe — it was a photo of when he became the youngest professor in Augustus. Taken with his guidance teacher, their first and last photo together.

His guidance instructor, was the genius Mechanical Engineering magician who entered Augustus Academy as a commoner fifty years ago. His talent was outstanding and he seemed to be much ahead of his entire generation. His field of research was also beyond the reach of the normal students as he selected the peak of all techniques — the legendary lost technology that could rival the divine beings.

However, the genius professor suddenly left the academy ten years ago. He met with a disaster at sea a few years later and his entire family died at sea.

The young professor always felt that this could never be a simple coincidence or accident. It must have been the deliberate work of malicious people

An important educational giant and attacking force just passed away like that, and the government was exceptionally simple about it. They immediately classified it as an accident and brushed it off like this. This made it even more suspicious to the young professor.

“Professor, no matter who it is or why they did it, I will definitely uncover the truth!”

Volume 1 Chapter 7 New Dormitory, Old Seniors

“This is your bedroom. Here are your keys and key card. The welcome dinner is at 6 pm. Be sure to wear your school uniform and badge. Don’t be late.”

“Got it. Thanks Senior.” After thanking the senior who led the way, Ouyang Xue entered her new bedroom.

It was a very spacious single bedroom. It was around thirty to forty metres square, had a balcony, a toilet with bathing facilities and common household electronics such as an air conditioner and a water heater. There was also a small area separated by a wall meant for training purposes.

The single bed was equipped with a matching blanket and a mosquito net. By the bed was a small drawer for placing personal stuff. A bookshelf and writing table was at the end of the bed. Textbooks and stationery were placed neatly on the bookshelf. On the table, there was even a multipurpose crystal ball (can be thought of as a multipurpose laptop) and a short wand — — these were the two things that Ouyang Xue had always wanted, as they were standard equipment for an elemental magician.

When opening the wardrobe beside the bookshelf, a complete set of daily necessities were all readily available; its interior had three sets of school and army uniform provided for winter, summer and autumn. Although she did not know what the army uniform was for, but needless to say, the living conditions here were extremely generous to Ouyang Xue.

“No wonder it’s the top magic academy, this is so amazing!” Ouyang Xue

jumped in excitement. She no longer needed to endure the harsh sun and cold winds during training, no longer had to study in the dim light of the old stone lamp, and no longer had to toss and turn on the tough board that was hard to sleep in.

With such a good environment, she believed that she could wholeheartedly concentrate on her studies to obtain even better results.

Nevertheless, Ouyang Xue naturally thought of her brother: “Don’t know how is it at big brother’s place.”

On the other side, while chatting with the leading student about the conditions of the school, Ouyang Tao soon arrived in front of his dormitory.

“Here you are, this is your dormitory, Special Zone No. 6. It’s a four man apartment. Other than you, there are only two others currently staying here. They are both your seniors in their second course. Here’s your dormitory key and key card. The welcome dinner is at six in the hall. Wear your uniform and pin your school badge. Be early. Well, that’s all. Bye.”

The leading student skillfully delivered the instructions and gave a bow before turning around to leave. Ouyang Tao stopped him and pointed at the dormitory and asked: “Wait wait, This..... What is this?”

“What’s wrong?”

“This is a dormitory? From what I see, it looks more like a villa.” That’s right, the so-called special zone was actually a villa zone. Inside were three storied baroque style bungalows with a small yard, garage, horse stable and a rooftop balcony. Ouyang Tao even saw workers trimming the grass in the yard.

Ouyang Tao had actually already noticed the villas initially. He originally thought it was for the nobles or people who wield power in the academy. Never did he think that it was a student dormitory and that he had a spot in it.

“Yeah, the dormitories in the special zones are all like that. Are you not

satisfied?”

“No.... That is....” It was far too grand! Ouyang Tao wanted to scream it out loud, but still managed to maintain his composure. “Why.... Why are the dormitories here different from those in the normal zones?”

“The special zone is only for those in the three special departments and graduate students. Of course it’s different.”

“Why is it different then?”

“About this.... Hehe, I’m also not too sure about it.”

Ouyang Tao could tell that this skinny senior, who was speaking to him with respect, actually knew the reason but couldn’t say it. Therefore he stopped pursuing the matter: “Okay. Thanks anyway.”

“No problem, it’s part of my job. Bye.”

The student who led the way had already left, but Ouyang Tao still had not entered the dormitory. Was this really his residential area? He was very suspicious.

After hesitating for a long awhile, Ouyang Tao finally inhaled deeply and bravely use his key card to open the gate — It opened! That proved that he was in the right place

As a result, Ouyang gathered his courage and slowly walked towards the door. He took out his keys to open the door.

Once his opened the door, he saw a scantily clad blonde female who was tall and had a hot figure leaning on the wall near the entrance to the house. She was sucking on a lollipop. She raised the corner of her mouth to smile and greeted Ouyang Tao: “Yo~ Waited very long for you, the fresh little meat that just arrived.”

Ouyang Tao's reaction was.....

“Sorry, wrong place.” He closed the door immediately and hastily stopped his nosebleed with his left hand — the situation was too stimulating and he was unable to control it.

“What wrong place, don't be shy and come in.”

“Eh, wait a minute, I.....”

The next moment, the door opened and the woman dragged Ouyang Tao into the room by the collar. She did it without any explanation and just dragged him and his luggage along.

The woman's build was comparable to Ouyang Tao's and she had great strength. Ouyang Tao did not even have any energy to retaliate and was forcefully dragged to the living room.

He felt extremely embarrassed about what she was wearing — she merely wore a short sleeved shirt over her bra. Not only that, she didn't even button up her shirt. From his current position, when looking forty five degrees downwards, the sight of it being there and then not, turned him on more than her being nude. In particular, the trembling of her large shaking boobs nearly caused Ouyang Tao's nosebleed to gush out.

Arriving at the living room, the woman finally let go of Ouyang Tao and called to another person in the house: “Chen Feng, our cute little junior is finally here.”

In the living room, a man in a white priest robe was meditating cross-legged with his back to Ouyang Tao. He was repeatedly hitting something using the small metal rod in his hand. Hearing the call, he slowly stood up, nodded in acknowledgement towards Ouyang Tao, before turning to glare back to the woman.

“Hehe. Sorry, but this junior is really too shy. He actually stood for so long outside before coming in. That's why, hehe.....” The woman giggled as she

explained.

“Fine fine, I apologise.” The man called Chen Feng did not say anything but merely stared at the woman. It was as if she understood what he wanted. Reluctantly, she turned around, scratched her head, and apologised to Ouyang Tao: “Sorry junior, hope I didn’t scare you just now.”

“Uhh.... It’s.... It’s okay.....” After cooling down for a while, Ouyang Tao roughly understood the situation — these two were probably the ones staying with him in the dormitory; the two graduate students.

The so-called graduate students are students who have already graduated but performed outstandingly. They’re then given a choice to re-enroll for further education and training. In other words, they are many batches the senior of Ouyang Tao.

Gathering his composure, Ouyang Tao began his introduction: “I’m Ouyang Tao from the Mechanical Engineering department. How do I address you seniors?”

“Monica, Feral Beasts graduate student.” The woman said. She shook Ouyang Tao’s hands and continued: “From today onwards we’re roommates. I’m not sure how your meat would taste.”

“Err.....” Ouyang Tao appeared to be a bit scared.

“Haha, I’m just kidding.”

Although she said that, Ouyang Tao felt that she wasn’t joking when she said it just now. Monica’s expression was like a beast looking at its prey.

The Feral Beasts department absorbs the energy of other living things to strengthen their own magic. They mainly specialise in shape-shifting and body enhancements.

Because the magic of Feral Beasts would affect one’s personality, therefore,

Feral Beast Magicians tend to have a kind of primitive and wild temperament and personality — although that was a rumour, judging from what he saw now, this female senior in front of him was likely affected by it.

However, all Ouyang Tao wished for was for this stunningly beautiful senior to at least button up her shirt. He didn't know where he should look.

After that, the man named Chen Feng walked up and shook Ouyang Tao's hand. However, he still remained silent.

Compared to the sexy and passionate Monica, Chen Feng face bore no expression. He appeared to be as calm as a mountain, and gave off a very dependable feeling — even if the fact that he did not speak was a bit scary.

Ouyang Tao observed that Chen Feng's forefinger and middle finger were different from ordinary people. They were exceptionally thick; nearly three times as thick as a normal human's finger. His other hand was the same. After shaking hands, he continued to use the metal rods in his hand to repeatedly hit those two fingers.

"I'll do the introduction. Chen Feng is my good friend. He's a graduate student in the Magical Swordsmanship department. He can't speak because of an injury, but he's a good guy." Said Monica who was at the side.

No wonder Chen Feng didn't speak. However, the fact that Monica could understand what Chen Feng wanted to say made people wonder.

At this time, Ouyang Tao suddenly felt that he should've brought a gift for their first meeting. However he did not prepare anything. Thinking hard, he opened his bag and brought out a few coconuts. "That.... I.... Did not prepare.... Just a few coconuts...."

To bring out a few coconuts as a gift for his seniors at such a high-class villa; Ouyang Tao knew that it seemed a bit shabby.

However, Monica did not mind: "Eh, first time seeing such a polite mechanical

engineering student. Well, I'm a little thirsty anyway. Thanks." She nonchalantly picked a coconut and pinched at the coconut with one hand. The entire coconut smashed into pieces. As a result, she didn't get to drink the juice and even made a mess of the floor. "Aiya, I used too much strength."

Watching from the side, Chen Feng shook his head. He also picked up a coconut; holding it with his left hand, he raised his right arm. *Pachaaa* His right forefinger and middle finger made a hole in the coconut. Then, he passed it to Monica.

"Hehe, that was embarrassing. Well, I'll help myself."

Chen Feng then looked at Ouyang Tao. It was as if he was apologising and was asking for another one.

"Ahh, sure, go ahead." Ouyang Tao did not know why but he actually replied.

That piqued Monica's interest and she laughed: "Wow, looks like you can understand Chen Feng from his eyes too."

"No, the abilities that you two seniors possess are what's amazing."

Without a need to use any magic; to merely use physical strength to crush a coconut with a pinch and to poke a hole through a coconut with a finger. This was not just a few days of training,

Ouyang Tao thought to himself, no wonder this is the top magic academy in the country. There's quite a few of talents here.

Volume 1 Chapter 8 – Invisible Pressure

With the remaining time, Monica brought Ouyang Tao to familiarise with the dormitory.

Inside the three story western villa, the first level was the living room, kitchen, bathroom and other shared facilities, while the second and third levels were the bedrooms. The second and third level housed two people. Since the villa was not full and Chen Feng enjoyed peace and quiet, he lived in the third level by himself while Monica and Ouyang Tao stayed at the second level,

Although the entire building took up quite a bit of space, each floor only had four rooms. Two of the rooms were bedrooms while the other two was a laboratory and a practice room.

The laboratory was well equipped with tools. This was excellent to Ouyang Tao who was strongly in love with Mechanical Technology.

The stable and garage were also free for use and even had professionals maintaining it. Monica and Chen Feng had no need for horses and cars. Therefore, those two areas were vacant. Monica also reminded Ouyang Tao that if he wanted to transform the garage into laboratory number two, he had to obtain permission from Chen Feng as well.

Soon, it was already afternoon. Ouyang Tao decided to make lunch to express thanks. Hence, he began his work in the first floor's kitchen.

Actually, he initially did not know how to cook. However, due to the fact that his parents were always out at sea, the responsibility of taking care of his younger sister fell to him. In order to let his sister eat healthily, Ouyang Tao had to learn how to cook.

Monica stood by his side curiously, looking intently at Ouyang Tao's great skill in cooking. He skillfully sliced and diced the ingredients before frying them: "Yo, not bad. I initially thought you had called your chef from home."

"How is that possible? I'm also not any noble blood." Once he said it, Ouyang Tao felt as if he had let out some secret. The frying in his hands slowed down.

"Oh, I know, you're this year's Mechanical Engineering's recruit who's a commoner."

"Uhhh..... Ahhhh..... Yes....." Feeling the huge and invisible hierarchy in the school made Ouyang Tao nervous. He even stopped frying his food.

"Don't lose focus. Your food's going to be burnt."

"Aw, shucks!" Ouyang Tao turned off the fire hastily and plated his completed dish.

"Look how nervous you are. Don't worry. Chen Feng and I are both commoners." Monica obviously saw through the worry in Ouyang Tao's heart. Any commoner student who entered Augustus would definitely have this worry at the start.

Monica patted Ouyang Tao on his shoulders: "Although there's a strong hierarchy in the school, as long as you possess talent, you will get what you want."

This simple word of encouragement acted as a potent form of reassurance for Ouyang Tao. He could tell that both seniors were good people.

Don't know how Ah Xue is right now — — Ouyang Tao could only hope that she

could adapt to the new lifestyle.

Time passed by quickly and it was soon 5 pm. Ouyang Tao wore his uniform and prepared to depart for the school hall to attend the welcome dinner. Chen Feng and Monica, being outstanding seniors, were also selected to attend as representatives.

The summer uniform was a pure white shirt and tie with dark blue pants or a skirt. Although it didn't match, Ouyang Tao habitually placed his metal gloves on his waist.

The school crest was what differentiated the students into their different faculties. The crest for the Mechanical Engineering Department was a silver gear. For Chen Feng's Magical Swordsmanship Department, it was a downwards pointing sword. As for the Feral Beast Department, it was a wolf howling towards the sky.

"My two seniors, I've already arranged to meet my sister. Hence, I shall leave first." His sister had earlier sent a message via the crystal ball to arrange to go for the dinner together. Therefore he left earlier.

Arriving at the library, his sister was already waiting there. She greeted Ouyang Tao from afar: "Bro, I'm here~~"

"Coming." Ouyang Tao promptly hastened his footsteps and arrived in front of his sister

As the saying goes, a man is what he wears. But sometimes, a person's charisma can bring out a very different feeling to the same clothes. The plain uniform when worn by Ouyang Xue gave off a smart feel. Even the hollow six sided star of the Elements Department looked like it was shining brightly.

Ouyang Xue happily twirled around in front of her brother: "Bro, how do I look?"

"Ah Xue is very cute." The simplest of compliments, but also what Ouyang Tao

really felt. Any other compliment was excessive to him. "It's about time. Let's go."

"Ok. Let's go." As Ouyang Xue said that, she held onto her brother's arm.

The sudden intimate action made Ouyang Tao distracted. He felt that this would definitely cause a misunderstanding: "Ah..... Ah Xue, what are you doing?"

But Ouyang Xue did not mind one bit: "What's wrong? We're siblings anyways."

"But..... But....." But there was nothing similar between the siblings. On their way there, they already caused several misunderstandings. How the two looked right now, made it seem like they were a couple madly in love. "Don't be like that. People will misunderstand."

"I don't care. I want to be with my brother." Actually, Ouyang Xue also didn't know why she suddenly acted in this way. She was actually dying of shyness. However, instead of releasing her brother's arm, she held onto it even tighter.

Ouyang Tao felt that maybe she was just too nervous in the new environment. He rubbed his sister's head and said: "Okay, but we must stop when we reach the hall."

"Mn!" Ouyang Xue happily slotted her head into her brother's arms.

The banquet in Augustus Academy was exceptionally large, and was able to hold thousands of people at one time. When the siblings entered the hall, they found out that the seats were actually arranged beforehand and each seat had a name tag on it. This also meant that everyone had to sit at their assigned seats, and the siblings would be split up.

Students from the Elements department and the six other common types of magic were seated according to their examination rankings. There were three thousand students and being ranked six hundred and forty four meant that she

was already sitting relatively close to the front. However, she was still quite far from her brother. This made Ouyang Xue disappointed.

The students from the three special departments sat at the very front. They were different from the other common departments as they each only required a table and each table was not even seated with ten.

The Mechanical Engineering department was seated at the centre of the three special departments and it only had six seats. This meant that other than Ouyang Tao, five others still had not arrived yet.

On the left was the Magical Swordsmanship Department. All ten students for that department had already arrived and Chen Feng was drawing with his hands. He appeared to be instructing them as the new students around him nodded continuously, as if they were learning a lot from him — it appeared that Chen Feng was quite significant in the Magical Swordsmanship department.

Slightly further down, Monica could be seen. Unlike the strict and tense atmosphere of the Magical Swordsmanship department, Monica acted like a passionate big sister and had already broken the ice with the new students at her table.

Even further down, Ouyang Tao finally spotted his sister — Ouyang Xue was cuddled up with her head down. She looked very reserved, even to the extent where she looked like she had been wrong and was very pitiful.

Ouyang Tao knew that his active and bubbly sister was actually bad at interacting with people. It could clearly be seen that she felt pressured — it could be because there were too many people here, and by comparison, she was only a member of the commoners.

That was actually true, for when Ouyang Xue looked up, her eyes happened to just meet with Ouyang Tao's. She deeply hoped that her brother would come to her side.

At this point, the other students from the Mechanical Engineering department had arrived. They all came together and it was obvious that they knew one

another. There were four guys and a girl, and the girl was the apple of their eyes. All four guys were competing with each other to strike a conversation with her.

It only took Ouyang Tao one look to recognise that she was the girl riding the horse at the gantry earlier; the daughter of the current prime minister.

The girl's beauty did not need to be elaborated on. The most important factor was that she belonged to a noble family. Her bearing was exceptionally graceful and she looked modest, but there was a feeling of untouchable nobility and a sense of superiority. One could say that she was a person of virtue and prestige.

The gathering felt more like a gathering for the nobles rather than a welcome party for the new students.

"The three special departments", "The sole commoner Mechanical Engineering student in close to fifty years", thinking about such situations, Ouyang Tao felt that he understood something — if he was right, the special departments were for a certain set of people, and he did not belong with them from the start.

Therefore, when the five others sat down, no one took notice of Ouyang Tao. He was an outsider who could only sit quietly in his seat.

Perhaps, his situation was much worse than his sister's.

Volume 1 Chapter 9 – Half Full From Anger

6pm. The welcome dinner began.

“Ladies and Gentlemen, please quiet down. First, let us invite the Headmaster to address us for tonight’s dinner.” No matter where, big scaled events always started with the leader’s speech. They usually said matters of not much importance, and were just platitudes.

However, the opening speech for the welcome dinner today was different, and it would prove to be an unforgettable event for Ouyang Tao.

Headmaster Grant was a man past his seventies but was still an energetic old man. He wore a grand black robe, and held a sample of a bird standing on a nest in his hand. He strode onto stage was followed by a group of workers carrying large metal boxes.

“To all new students and all outstanding graduate students, good evening!” Although it was only a normal greeting, the headmaster’s loud voice revealed his spirit, which caught everyone’s attention.

Holding up the sample in his hand, he asked: “Can everyone see the sample in my hand? Does anyone know which bird it is?”

“It’s a cuckoo bird, Headmaster.” Someone answered from below the stage.

“That’s right! It is a cuckoo bird.” Then, he removed an egg from the nest. “So what egg do you think this is?”

“Of course it the cuckoo bird’s, Headmaster!” The same person replied. Then, people from the Feral Beasts department started to laugh.

“Please sit down student. Very sorry, but this is a sparrow egg.” As he said that, more people started laughing. The embarrassed student could only sit down awkwardly. The headmaster signaled everyone to keep quiet before continuing: “The bird nest is a sparrow’s nest as the cuckoo does not know how to construct a nest.

Just what is this headmaster trying to say? The speech by the old man that Ouyang Tao thought was going to be boring suddenly got him interested.

“The cuckoo bird only lays its eggs in another bird’s nest. However the baby cuckoo is born earlier and is bigger than other birds. Therefore, it requires more food to grow. So how do they do it?” He let go out of the sparrow egg in his hands; it then fell to the ground and broke into pieces. “This is how they do it.”

After which, the headmaster even flipped the entire nest over, causing all the other sparrow eggs to fall onto the floor, and smash to become a pile of garbage — Ouyang Tao did not know why, but this action felt very impactful to him. It was as if something in his heart had been smashed as well.

“Everyone here are like a newly born cuckoo, and these.....” The headmaster suddenly stopped and waved his hands up. All the metal boxes around him suddenly opened up and paper from inside flew to the sky before spilling onto the floor. “Are the sparrow eggs who failed to survive.”

Ouyang Tao picked up one of the pieces of paper and immediately understood what the headmaster meant — these were all application forms from people who failed to get into Augustus Academy. After a while, the papers self ignited, and did not even leave ash behind, as they disappeared into thin air. With that, the headmaster continued his speech.

“Every year, millions of people from all over the country and world send in their application for Augustus Academy, all vying to sit at the spot you are in now. But every year, we only accept three thousand and thirty people. Therefore, just by sitting here, you all have already defeated millions of enemies.

Hence, I congratulate all of you!”

The applause rang aloud from below the stage and stopped quickly, but at this time, Ouyang Tao felt a sudden sense of fear.

“Maybe some of you might think that this is very cruel, heartless, and even empathise with the failures. However, I can tell you for sure, that there is no need for that. Because what a cuckoo faces is the Pine Lappet, what other birds cannot handle. And for all of you, what you need to accomplish in the future is a mission which normal people cannot perform.”

This is definitely not a normal academy! In Ouyang Tao’s heart, this was the conclusion he had already formed, and he was extremely certain about it because of what the Headmaster had pointed out at the end.

“Augustus Academy is a battle academy! Everyone of you is a fighter! Every day of your life here is a fight! Even though you won the first battle, do not relax, because the battle has only begun!”

A strict hierarchy of nobility and commoners and ruthless battles; learning and training in such an environment would no doubt, produce an elite of the magic world. As expected, this strictness was the reason why it was worthy of being called the top magic academy.

However, Ouyang Tao was worried about the “mission which normal people cannot perform” that the Headmaster had said, and wondered what it was.

As the headmaster finished his speech, the dinner officially started. Once again, Ouyang Tao was engulfed by a lonely atmosphere. Furthermore, he faced his first adversity after arriving at the Academy — at the dinner, the special faculty students ate french cuisine, but he didn’t even know how to use a fork and knife.

The others at his table already began chatting and gracefully ate their meal, but Ouyang Tao could only eat the garlic bread, and stare at the remaining food without knowing how to start.

After some contemplating, he attempted to imitate the actions of others, but because of the friction between the knife and fork with the plate, he produced a “creaking” noise. This caused the others at his table to look at him in disdain, and made Ouyang Tao feel even more awkward.

Drats, I can’t even eat a meal properly! Ouyang Tao was anxious and angry; he was unusually discontent mainly because of how the others looked at him —— this silent kind of ostracizing would make one even more angry, compared to insults that were voiced. It was because this kind of contempt came originated from deep within their bones —— plainly speaking, they looked down on commoners.

And this, deeply injured Ouyang Tao’s pride.

At this point, Ouyang Tao felt as though he was sitting on pins and needles. Every second felt longer and several times, he thought of standing up and leaving; but in the end, he decided to not do so.

Leaving would mean that he was avoiding them. It would mean that he gave up and surrendered! This would make them look down on him even more.

Furthermore, the good food there, was definitely worth eating!

Screw it. Since it’s already like that, I shall just do it my way; all the manners and images should just go to hell! I should just eat first and decide later!

With this in mind, Ouyang Tao carried a determination to give it his all. He picked up the soup and gulped down the thick buttery soup. Then he used the fork and stuffed all the food into his mouth. No matter was it foie gras, cod fish, desert or whatever, Ouyang Tao did not care. As long as it was food, it entered the mouth. Even the steak was picked up using the fork and bitten off piece by piece. After finishing his dishes, he finally gulped down the fruit juice before wiping his mouth and rising to leave his seat.

“How uncultured.”

“A commoner is a commoner.”

“I can’t believe such a person could enter Mechanical Engineering. This must be a joke.”

These comments that came from behind Ouyang Tao were clearly heard, but he did not care. All that was important was the fact that he was full! — Even if half of it was due to anger.

Doing his own thing and not caring about the comments from others — this meal in some ways, set down the tone of Ouyang Tao’s future school life.

Volume 1 Chapter 9.5 – Interval #3

Other than the headmaster's speech, the welcome dinner had another important segment, which was the teacher-student interaction.

Actually, the higher ranked teachers and professors sat at the very end of the banquet. They chatted and observed the new students from afar, only appearing and interacting with the students when it was halfway through the banquet.

This arrangement was made to allow teachers and students to interact and know one another better. Furthermore, not allowing the teacher to come out too early was to try and avoid making the students act too reserved, which would affect the interaction between the new students.

When it was about time, the teachers all stood up and went to their assigned tables to meet the new students. In the next few years, these teachers would be in charge of the progress of the students' training and advancements; while also aiding them to become proficient magicians, no, warriors.

For the seven common departments, each table had one teacher, which meant that each high ranked teacher had to tutor ten students. Whereas for the three special departments, each student had their own dedicated teacher and they conducted their own one-to-one training.

However, such a scheme had its disadvantages. This was even more so for the teachers of the special departments. The student's skill level and results became the gauge of the teachers abilities. In other words, the competition between students in the special departments was essentially a competition between the teachers.

“Professor Lu, looks like your student..... Heheh.”

Due to the fact that Ouyang Tao left early, when the teachers entered, he was no longer there. Facing an empty chair, Ouyang Tao’s teacher Lu Yun undoubtedly faced the laughter and sarcasm from other teachers.

“Yeah, no able to meet him now, is a little disappointing.” Luckily, Lu Yun was already used to it and reacted very smoothly. He sat down at the seat prepared for him and smiled, remaining silent — even though it was awkward, it was the best way to handle it.

Despite that silence and calmness was the best way to handle such a situation, it was not the way that Lu Yun desired.

Looks like he’s a child with a temper — the silent Lu Yun thought.

In fact, he already knew that Ouyang Tao had left his seat. He even saw everything that happened just now, very clearly. Without asking, he knew in his heart what had happened — because Lu Yun had faced a similar situation before.

Even though Lu Yun was born from nobility, in this era, his family had fallen from grace. Plainly speaking, he was a lowly noble who lived no differently from a commoner — unnoticed, alone, ostracised, and was looked down by the rest. Lu Yun had faced all this before.

Therefore, Lu Yun knew that logically speaking, under such a situation, Ouyang Tao’s actions were very rash and illogical. Because no matter what the weak do, it would only make matters worse. The only way was to not do anything at all.

At that time, Lu Yun thought that as long as he had the necessary skills and was able to obtain recognition from others, he could obtain a place in the academy, and hence improve his situation — however, he was only half right. Lu Yu definitely climbed to the position of the youngest professor in Augustus based on his own abilities, but his situation did not change much.

That was because he was ostracised and envied by the other professors.

Towards this, Lu Yun still chose to remain silent about it. His silence allowed him to remain in this field — but that was not the situation he wanted.

Today, he saw Ouyang Tao pick a different approach to handle this — even if he was looked down upon, even if he was ostracised, he wanted to make his stand and be himself.

This never admitting defeat spirit and rash action had sparked a fire in the silent Lu Yun's heart.

“Teacher Sir, may I speak with you?” During Lu Yun's contemplation, a young lady arrived in front of him — the sole child of the current prime minister Marquis Jacqueline, and graduate student in the Mechanical Engineering Department, Tia.

“Of course you can!” Lu Yun cheerfully agreed. This could greatly help him ease out of the current awkward situation.

Tia was Lu Yun's previous student, and was reputed to be a “once in a century genius”, and had already obtained the nickname Mechanics Master.

As her guidance teacher, Lu Yun was extremely proud to have such an outstanding student.

Tia sat down beside Lu Yun before continuing: “Teacher Sir, I have a small request.”

“Mn, continue.”

“In tomorrow's guidance match, I want to spar with the commoner student Ouyang Tao.”

“Oh?” The unexpected request caught Lu Yun off-guard that he didn't know

how to answer for a while.

However, curiosity got the better of him and very quickly, Lu Yun made his decision.

Volume 1 Chapter 10 – Battle Mages From The Country Without An Army

“Dammit..... God dammit.....” 8 a.m. was the scheduled time, but Ouyang Tao had hurriedly left an hour earlier to go to the administration building. He complained on one side, while walking on the other.

He wasn’t complaining about others, but was actually blaming himself.

As the saying goes, “luck doesn’t come in pairs, and misfortune never comes alone”. It wasn’t until last night, when both seniors Monica and Chen Feng came back to the dormitory, did Ouyang Tao find out that his rash action of leaving the banquet had caused several problems.

He had missed the chance to meet with his guidance teacher, and left his guidance teacher alone in humiliation. It was as if Ouyang Tao was seeking death..... It was too late for Ouyang Tao’s regrets.

Therefore, on the first day of school, Ouyang Tao got up early in order to go to his teacher’s office to apologise.

Arriving at the administration building, he stood in front of Office 702. Ouyang Tao went through his apology once again in his mind before pressing the doorbell.

“Please enter.”

After obtaining permission, Ouyang Tai entered the room, only to see young

man in a dark purple cloak arranging the desk filled with documents. This caused him to wonder whether he came too early and was disturbing his teacher's work.

"Don't just stand there. Close the door and come in before you speak."

"Yes." Ouyang Tao closed the door, walked in front of the desk, and prepared to apologise.

But the professor put down his documents and spoke before Ouyang Tao could: "Are you Ouyang Tao?"

"Yes, I am."

"Okay, I'm Lu Yun, the guidance teacher that will be in charge of you for the next five years. You can call me Teacher Sir, Professor Lu, or just call me Teacher. I'm fine with all of them." As he said that, he held out his hand.

"Um..... H-hello Professor Lu. Calling him "Teacher" right away seem too informal and "Teacher Sir" too formal. Not knowing which to decide on, Ouyang Tao just chose the middle one, and shook his hands. He took the opportunity to try and apologise: "Yesterday I....."

"It's okay, I know what happened yesterday. You don't have to talk about it anymore. However, I do hope that you would be able to learn some table etiquette within this term to avoid anything similar from happening again."

"Yes." Ouyang Tao straightened his back and felt that even though his teacher was generous and straightforward, at the same time he showed his strictness.

"Okay, follow me to the Battle Arena. I will tell you the exact situation on the way."

Although he didn't know why he was going to the Arena immediately, Ouyang Tao still followed Lu Yun and left the office.

Even though there was a bus in school, Lu Yun and Ouyang Tao still chose to walk, which was a bit unusual. This allowed them to have more time together.

On the way, the main person who spoke was not Lu Yun, but was actually Ouyang Tao. This was because Lu Yun had to plan the lesson and time table according to the student, and Ouyang Tao used this opportunity to know more about the situation of the academy .

Students from the three special departments all had their own assigned guidance teacher and all lessons and conduct were decided by him. Their daily necessities and food were all free, and there was even a one hundred silver bursary each month — the money was what Ouyang Tao was most interested in.

But he was even more certain that the money was not for free.

“So this means that everything you know was self-taught?”

“Yes, because I was always interested in that sort of stuff. Furthermore, I didn’t know how to use any other forms of magic. As a result, I single-mindedly concentrated on Mechanics.

From this conversation, Lu Yun could tell that Ouyang Tao was a student with potential and high learning capabilities, but he lacked something important: “I can see your potential, and truthfully, I can’t teach you much about techniques and Mechanical Engineering. You can learn most of it yourself.”

“Ah?” Ouyang Tao was stunned for a while. He came here to learn higher level techniques, but why did this teacher say that there wasn’t much to teach?

“Then..... Then Professor Lu, what do you plan..... to teach me?”

“Combat.”

“Combat?!” Although he had predicted it, Ouyang Tao couldn’t help but be shocked after actually hearing it.

“Didn’t the headmaster already say it in his speech yesterday? Augustus Academy is a Battle Academy.....” Lu Yun suddenly stopped and turned around, strictly staring at Ouyang Tao and continued: “And a Mechanical Engineering Mage is a Battle Mage.”

“B..... Battle Mage?” Hearing this, Ouyang Tao was even more stunned than before.

“Hmm, from your reaction, it seems like you don’t know anything about this.”

“This..... Yeah..... Professor Lu, could you please tell me more?” Since coming to the academy, Ouyang Tao felt that Augustus Academy was definitely not a normal academy, and the Mechanical Engineering field was not normal. He wanted to know what it was actually like.

“Of course, since you’re a member of the Mechanical Engineering Department, there are things you have the right to know.” Hearing all this, chills ran down Ouyang Tao’s spine. He felt that anything he was going to hear next would definitely not be normal. “Let me summarise, you know the the Principality of Ryan is a model peace country that does not have any armies. We only have a few armed police and a magician squad, correct?”

“Yes.”

“But that’s actually not the whole story. The magician squad is actually our country’s standby army, and in the magician squad, Mechanical Magicians form the core of the attack force.”

“Ah? Why?”

“It’s quite simple actually. Think about it, if you could expand your powers, then after the power up, the things you could do would be unimaginable.” But Ouyang Tao could only shake his head. He couldn’t imagine it. Therefore, Lu Yun continued to explain: “As long as you have enough materials, a skilled Mechanical Engineering Mage could easily construct a squad of a Mechanical troops in short amount of time. Furthermore, he could also collect the scrap materials back to reconstruct another attack force and continue battling. If we

battle like this, our country has no need to spend money to supply a regular army. Do you understand if I put it this way?"

Ouyang Tao blinked his eyes in a silly manner. Even though he could understand what his teacher had just said, the contents of the conversation was as difference as the heavens and earth, when compared to what he had originally thought.

I only wanted to quietly find a high income job, earn some money, and enjoy happy days!

"Does that mean I have to join the battlefield next time?"

"Well, that's for sure. I said all this in hopes that you would understand two things. Firstly, I hope you understand your responsibility and mission."

"Yes, I understand it now." Although he understood, Ouyang Tao had already started to regret.

"Secondly, I hope you understand why the Mechanical Engineering department is so strict and cautious about recruiting commoners as students."

About this, however, Ouyang Tao still did not understand: "Why?"

"Think about it for a while, a Mechanical Magician is equal to an army. If they rebel, it will be an entire army's worth of a riot. Therefore, something like an army, is naturally..... you understand?"

"I understand." Ouyang Tao finally understood what his teacher meant. Things like an army naturally should only be controlled by a ruler; in other words, a noble.

"Also, there's another thing I want you to be clear of. Augustus Academy's graduation rate is only about sixty percent of its students. Among those who do not graduate, seventy percent of them are due to deaths."

The longer Ouyang Tao listened, the more scared he became: “Professor Lu, may I ask you a question?”

“Go ahead.”

“Do the other Mechanical Engineering students know about this?”

“Of course. Since young, they received special technical guidance and battle training. Maybe in terms of techniques, you won’t lose to any of them. However, in instinct and battle knowledge, you are far from their level.” Lu Yun paused for awhile before adding: “and that’s exactly what I’m going to teach you.”

Ouyang Tao felt that the circumstances were awfully terrible, and even began harbouring thoughts of quitting in his head: “So it’s like that.....”

If it was like this; the strict entry criteria for the special departments, the overly good treatment, and the headmaster’s speech that said “the mission in which normal people cannot perform”, all became clear — — they were not teaching students, but training soldiers!

And now, Lu Yun changed the topic to something he was very interested in: “Now let me ask you a question.”

“Please say.”

“That glove of yours seems very important to you?” Since yesterday, Lu Yun realised that no matter where Ouyang Tao went, he brought a silver colored metal glove with him. From what he remembered, his guidance teacher also had a similar glove. But his was the right side whereas Ouyang Tao’s was the left.

“Not that important.” Ouyang Tao shook his head. “It’s just that I wear it when I work, and it became a habit to bring it everywhere.”

“So it’s like that.....”

As they continued talking, the battle arena was in sight. Ouyang Tao had to ask: “Professor Lu, what are we at the arena for?”

“The guidance match. Be prepared for the first match in your life.”

“What the fuck!?”

Ouyang Tao was immediately, shocked silly.

Volume 1 Chapter 11 – Even If I Can't Win, I Won't Lose In Spirit

A match. Such a thing had never crossed Ouyang Tao's mind before. He didn't even think he would ever have anything to do with it.

But now, he was going to engage in the first battle of his life, with almost no preparation at all. It was such a hopeless situation..... Ouyang Tao even had the urge to roar those thoughts out loud.

Thinking back, this was the reason why his teacher had deliberately not talked about the match on the way here.

No matter what he said or did, it was already too late. No matter what happened, he had to engage in a match with another person.

Fear was not the only thing in Ouyang Tao's mind right now — I'll fight if I have to, I'm not afraid! The give-it-his-all attitude also appeared in the youth's mind.

As the saying goes: "Any last minute preparation, even if rushed, may be of some use." Using whatever little amount of travel time, Ouyang Tao continuously asked his teacher questions, and hoped he would teach him a few tricks: "But Professor Lu, no matter what, I still don't know anything; so it's improbable that I'll win."

"Sheesh, why're you so nervous? Didn't I just say that this was merely a guidance match with a senior? It's normal to lose. Its main purpose is for you to

get battle experience.”

Actually, Ouyang Tao also knew that no matter what, anything battle related should not be easily mastered in such a short amount of time. What’s more, his opponent had been going through an interrelated training since childhood. However, he felt that if he tried hard enough, he may not lose too miserably: “But Professor Lu, at the very least, could you tell me the rules?”

“Oh, that I can. I’ll slowly tell you about it later.”

The battle arena was as big as a soccer field with a magical array drawn on it. Surrounding it were audience seats, and it appeared that no one else was here yet. On the stage stood Ouyang Tao and his guidance teacher, Lu Yun. But below the stage, workers had already started to move mountains and mountains of materials on stage.

Not just that, there was even an on-site ambulance. The medical team looked completely ready for whatever was going to happen. Thinking about the “deaths” his teacher had previously mentioned, Ouyang Tao felt a cold chill — — They were for real!

“Wear this protective amulet later when you go up.” Lu Yun passed an amulet to Ouyang Tao, and continued: “This protective amulet has strong protective magic. It works together with the magical arrays on the field. Once it detects that you have received fatal damage, it will activate and send you out immediately. Of course, this also means that you have lost.”

“Umm, what if I refuse to admit defeat, or carry out certain life-threatening tactics?”

“Ohh? You sound very motivated. Already planning to risk your life?” He was obviously terrified when hearing about the battle, but in this short span of a few minutes, he was unexpectedly already thinking about risking his life in battle. This change made Lu Yun become exceptionally surprised.

“How should I put it..... Since professor already said that losing was normal, then I don’t have much to be afraid of. All I’m thinking of right now, is how I’m

going to bring out my utmost spirit.”

“Good spirit.” Lu Yun praised him. “As per the rules, I should tell you that gently tapping the protective amulet can cancel its automated function. And it only activates when you break the chain holding it, which also signifies your surrender. But I advise you to not push yourself too hard.”

Not only was this the first time Ouyang Tao was fighting a battle, his opponent was also proficient in battles.

This was not only because it was Ouyang Tao’s first time going into battle, but was more because he was about to face an opponent who was most likely going win.

“I understand. I’ll be careful.”

Then, Lu Yun pointed at the workers moving the materials and said: “Those are all general alloys. From them, you should be able to obtain most of the elements that you need. On the other side are the refined magic stones. These are all the materials that are available.”

“Looks good enough!”

“Because this is a guidance match, there are a lot of materials available for you. Furthermore, your opponent will have a lot of restrictions. Some restrictions are that they can’t have more than six machines on stage, and the machines and weapons created cannot be higher than Grade 5. There’s also a time limit of five minutes. However in an actual battle, there will be limited resources and no time limit, to make it fair.”

“I roughly understand.” However, Ouyang Tao soon realised another big problem — he didn’t even know how to, and never had constructed a battle machine before.

But now, there was no more time for him to obtain advice from his teacher, as the other Mechanical Engineering students and their respective teachers all

entered the arena.

“Professor Lu, you’re early.”

“Yes, just bringing my student to familiarise with the arena.”

“Professor Lu, I heard that the first match of the day was specially requested by you?”

“Haha, an old student’s request, satisfying her is of no harm.”

Lu Yun and the other professors started to converse, but from what Ouyang Tao saw, the others were not actually as friendly towards his professor as they seemed. It looked as though they were maliciously waiting for something stupid to happen to him.

“Ouyang Tao, go to the standby area and prepare in advance. Once everyone is here, the first one to go on stage would be you.”

“AHH?!” Ouyang Tao was shocked agape. Not only was it his first battle, he was also the first to fight. He originally wanted to observe how others fought, but did not have a chance now.

“What are you Ahhh-ing for, go quickly, make use of your time to prepare.”

Prepare? Prepare what? Ouyang Tao was left with no choice. But then again, there was nothing much to prepare. The quicker he finished, the quicker he could get leave.

“Haha, Professor Lu, what’s wrong? Your student looks very nervous.”

“Yeah. Does he not have any battle experience?”

At this point, Ouyang Tao heard the other professor’s sarcasm towards his own teacher.

Then, he suddenly realised how much pressure there must be for his guidance teacher to have a commoner student.

I can't let my teacher be disgraced! Once he thought of this, Ouyang Tao was even more willing to give it his all.

But the problem now was, even though it was his first battle, he understood that only having spirit was not enough in battles. What else could he use to fight against his opponent?

Ouyang Tao sunk in his seat and continued to wrack his brains. He had to come up with a plan with the little amount of time he had.

Suddenly, a voice came from above him: "You must be the commoner student Ouyang Tao, right?"

"Yes, you are....." He looked up and immediately recognised the beautiful face that was looking at him — the Mechanical Engineering Department's only female student, daughter of the current prime minister. She was glaring at him as she looked down at him. "Ahh, the prime minister's daughter?"

"My name is Tia Jacqueline. Remember this name!"

Tia's tone was low but had power and was packed with plenty of firepower. Ouyang Tao realised that she was challenging him — Wait a minute, she couldn't be my opponent later, could she?

About Tia, Ouyang Tao found out some facts about her from conversing with Monica yesterday. Just from her rank, she was a Mechanics Expert who was six to seven ranks higher than Ouyang Tao. How could he not be worried — But why was his first battle against such an opponent?

But Ouyang Tao continuously reminded himself, in spirit I must not lose. Therefore, he replied strongly: "Do you need something from me?"

“Hmph, looks like you have some spirit.” Tia said and raised up three fingers: “Three minutes, as long as you hold on for three minutes, we shall consider it my lost!”

“You.....”

“See you on the battlefield!”

Not waiting for Ouyang Tao’s reply, Tia turned to walk away, and simply did not care about Ouyang Tao one bit.

“Tch. Hmph, what hmph.” Ouyang Tao blurted out. Then, he suddenly had an idea — sufficient materials, a time limit, three minutes..... I’ve got it!”

Ouyang Tao thought up a strategy. In this match, he had already made up his mind, and did not plan to win.

Volume 1 Chapter 12 – Against You Till Death

Approximately ten minutes later, all the participants in today's Mechanical Engineering guidance match and their guidance teachers arrived in the battle arena. Other than the guidance matches between the senior and the freshman, there was also the annual battle between the seniors.

The opening act of the day was the match between commoner student Ouyang Tao and the current strongest student in Augustus Academy, Tia Jacqueline.

Nobody thought that Ouyang Tao would win — — including Ouyang Tao himself.

To the students and teachers in the spectator stands, there was only one thing worth watching in this match. It was to see how long Ouyang Tao could last. Some of the bored seniors even opened up their own private gambling den to bet on how fast Ouyang Tao would lose.

“Can both competitors please enter the ring.”

Following the instructions of the broadcast, Ouyang Tao and Tia walked out of their respective ends. They were more than a hundred metres apart. Ouyang Tao looked tense, as if welcoming a dangerous opponent, whereas Tia looked extremely confident.

“You may start channeling your magic! Countdown in ten!”

Ten seconds before the match started, both parties started transferring their

magic into the pile of materials. This was to ensure they were able to complete their construction as quickly as possible after the match started. At the same time, a protective barrier was raised around the stage to protect the audience.

“10, 9, 8..... 3, 2, 1, START!!!”

At the sound of “START”, the electronic board above the stage began its timer. Tia showed her strength first, by creating four human-shaped machines. The thick shield on the left arm of the machines stood firm on the ground, and formed a barrier in front of her. The right arm of the machines were equipped with a cannon that was already rapidly firing. A series of explosion surrounded Ouyang Tao and smoke covered the battleground. Ouyang Tao could not be seen from within the smoke.

As they watched this scene, the students watching were ferociously discussing about the match.

“Wah, she’s so cruel.”

“Wah, looks like the Big Miss is being serious.”

“I don’t think that kid can last longer than a minute.”

This wasn’t an exaggeration; all the students in the Mechanical Engineering department had faced Tia before and knew how good she was. Most of them lost too quickly, and even those who could withstand her attacks were unable to retaliate.

The ammunition fired by the cannons were designed and repeatedly improved by Tia. When using magic stones to increase its power, they could pierce armour, and had the ability to explode. Its effectiveness did not even lose to normal rockets. Furthermore, the speed at which she modified her machines was so fast that just withstanding her attack was not easy.

The best defense is offense. Using strong firepower to pressurise the enemy to obtain an advantage and then react according to how the opponent reacted.

This kind of aggressive attacking style that relied on vast experience and strong foundations was Tia's usual fighting style.

However, Lu Yun who was observing the battle from high above the stands saw some hope on this battle.

Even though she held the advantage, she did not let her guard down. She continued firing for another half a minute. However, the countdown continued ticking down which meant that Tao was blocking her first round of attacks.

It was weird that even though the first attacks were withstood, at this point, the opponent should've already retaliated. Why was he still not making a move?

Her instincts tingled and Tia realised that Ouyang Tao's materials were continuously being used up. He couldn't be.....

Tia immediately stopped her assault and created a large fan to blow away the smoke and dust. At the same time, she observed from behind her machines' shields to find out what the commoner was up to.

The smoke soon cleared up and what appeared in front of Tia was a protective wall. It was made out of many small hexagonal-shaped pieces that could change its shape according to the situation. Tia was surprised. This was not a commonly seen machine type. Just what the hell was it?

"Hmph." Quickly, Tia softly hummed and appeared unfazed. She realised Ouyang Tao's tactic: "To waste time using full defense, too naive! Substitution!"

At the sound of "Substitution", Tia quickly changed her machines. She changed the cannons into a heavy artillery gun, and even gave it a frame for support.

As the firing continued, the firepower was ten times stronger than before; the heavy artillery gun constantly fired armour piercing rounds on Ouyang Tao's wall. Despite that, he was still not defeated after forty seconds. The protective wall continued to be built by Ouyang Tao, and stood strong in front of Tia.

At this point, the people watching the match grew more interested in it. Although until now, Tia had only used Grade 1 machine “soldiers”, but able to withstand a minute of Tia’s firepower was already not simple.

Tia also started to become nervous since she self-proclaimed a three minute victory. However, almost half the time had been used and Tao’s protective wall still stood tall under her heavy firepower. It didn’t even seem to have suffered much damage. Even Tia started to wonder, could the wall this guy built from those alloys really be that indestructible?

However, her vast combat experience told her to calm down. Since her opponent chose to defend, the advantage would still be in her hands. As she continued to fire the artillery gun, Tia started to carefully observe the protective wall.

Although the wall didn’t seem to take damage, Ouyang Tao’s materials had already lessen considerably. This means that he had been continuously constructing something. This seemed very odd.....

“It can’t be.....” Tia thought of a near crazy possibility, but she still chose to check it out. Hence, she created a high-speed observation machine to collect data. Half a minute later, the results came out: “It really is like that.....”

The structure of Tao’s wall was simple. Every hexagonal piece could be mass produced at high speed and was a reactionary armour by nature. Every time Tia’s machine fired a round, the hexagonal piece exploded upon contact to nullify the impact of Tia’s round. Ouyang Tao was therefore continuously producing the hexagonal pieces to replenish the usage, which allowed the protective wall to remain whole.

Obviously, doing this would use up a large amount of magic power very quickly. Such a tactic could not be used for long.

This also proved that Ouyang Tao was determined to drag time.

“Okay, let’s see how much magic power you have to consume against me!” With only one minute left, Tia decided to be merciless and increase the number

of machines to the highest limit of six and remove the shields; both arms of the machines became heavy artillery guns, and suddenly increased their firepower up by three-fold.

“Damn..... My ears are about to go deaf from all the explosions..... Is she done yet..... Huff..... Huff.....” Behind the protective wall, Ouyang Tao had not relaxed at all. On one hand he was concentrating on maintaining the controls of the orb in his hand and on the other, he was complaining about the situation.

Although he could temporarily withstand it, the feeling of being suppressed and attacked caused him to be unhappy. Luckily, his stubborn determination helped him overcome his fear of battling for the first time, which thus allowed him to fully concentrate on the battle.

At this point, he was already covered in sweat. Just as Tia thought, this kind of strategy used up a lot of his magic power. What’s more, with Tia’s increased firepower, his magic was used up even more quickly. As he started to lose his strength, Ouyang Tao half knelt on the ground — — He even started to wonder whether or not he could withstand all of it.

Then, he raised his head to look at the countdown timer. Two minutes and fifteen seconds left, which meant that the three minutes were about to be up. This spurred him on as he gritted his teeth and held on: “Huff..... Huff..... Good..... Just a bit more..... A little bit..... Daddy here will stand against you till death.”

As he watched the stage, Lu Yun had already let out a hardly recognisable faint smile. A complete newbie who was solely relying on willpower, was actually withstanding the ferocious assault of a senior for three minutes. This had far surpassed his expectations.

Tia’s guidance teacher, Professor Cologne could no longer take it and shouted from below stage: “Tia, what are you doing! It’s already been three minutes!”

What!? Three minutes!? It’s already been three minutes? Tia couldn’t believe it as she looked at the clock which stated that there were two minutes left.

Ever since entering Augustus Academy, no one was capable of fighting her in the arena for more than three minutes, let alone this commoner freshman!

Unacceptable, absolutely unacceptable! Tia's pride suffered an enormous blow.

The students in the audience, who had never seen anyone last three minutes, were now fully concentrated on the match.

Could he even force a draw with me? Tia began harbouring such thoughts in her mind. No, I absolutely can not let that happen. Everyone's watching! Even though she had essentially lost already, she definitely had to win on stage!

Thinking about this, Tia became even more merciless. She was going to use the remaining two minutes to teach the opponent before her eyes, a ruthless lesson.

Volume 1 Chapter 12.5 – Interval #4

As he watched his student's performance from below the stage, to use the word satisfaction to describe how Lu Yun was feeling was already insufficient.

This youth not only had zero battle experience, he didn't even know how to construct the most basic of machine and weapons.

He actually dragged the battle to such a state by merely relying on his never say die attitude, and his self-created defense method. Lu Yun felt that this youth would perhaps be able to walk on a different path.

About the other student.....

Tia was no doubt an outstanding Mechanical Magician and warrior. In terms of her determination, or let's say stubbornness, Lu Yun felt that both students were very similar, which made him remember what had happened during the banquet last night.

When Tia pointed out that she wanted to battle against the new commoner student, Lu Yun's first reaction was naturally shock: "Why do you want to fight him?"

The new student guidance match was a tradition in Augustus Academy. Every new student had to challenge a senior student once. To some extent, it was for the seniors to show their prowess to the new students.

In other words, choosing your opponent actually had the hidden meaning that you wanted to teach that person a lesson.

Tia was a graduate student who had the title of Mechanical Master. She had been unbeaten in battles ever since she entered the academy. With her reputation and skills, challenging a freshman who had just entered school was too much, and could be seen as bullying.

And Tia's reason for choosing him was: "Because his attitude makes me upset."

"Attitude? What kind of attitude?"

"His attitude that challenged me."

So that was it. That was how she saw Ouyang Tao. In some sense, Ouyang Tao's action on the night of the dinner did exhibit some form of retaliation. But actually, it was a sense of forced retaliation. He definitely wasn't issuing a challenge.

Furthermore, Lu Yun was a bit selfish. He didn't wish for his student to lose so badly in his first battle at the academy: "Hehe, I don't think he was challenging you Tia. What's more, wouldn't it seem like bullying if you fight him?"

However, Tia was very persistent: "No, it was him who challenged me first. His arrogance itself is a challenge."

"Arrogance? How did you get that?"

"I hear that in nearly fifty years, he's the first peasant recruited into Mechanical Engineering right?"

"Yes."

"And Teacher Sir, I remember, in the history of Augustus, there are only two other commoner students in the history of Mechanical Engineering. One is the late headmaster, and the other is the expert of the lost science and technology, Professor Lin Shixiong. Am I right?"

“Yes.” Hearing his own teacher’s name made Lu Yun uncomfortable. Still unsure of how she came to this conclusion, he nodded and asked: “Tia, what is your point in saying all of this?”

“That’s what I was thinking; if this peasant could obtain admission to Augustus, wouldn’t he possess a similar strength to the other seniors?”

Hearing this, Lu Yun finally understood. Rather than her saying she wanted to teach the new student a lesson, she should have said that she craved for a strong opponent.

But the time was still not ripe, so therefore Lu Yun kindly rejected her: “Erm..... Hehe, Tia, maybe you overestimated him..... As of now, he still does not possess the strength you imagine.”

“If he does not possess that level of skill, Teacher Sir, I think that the peasant student should learn how to respect and be courteous to his seniors.

“Well.....” Lu Yun was worried. Because the conversation between him and Tia’s conversation had already gotten the attention of the other professors.

“Professor Lu, what’s wrong with that? Both of them are your students. Letting them spar and exchange skills is a good thing.” Tia’s new guidance teacher, the one who strongly tried to prevent Ouyang Tao from entering the academy joined in on the conversation.

“Yeah, anyway, it’s only a guidance match.”

“Mn, we’re also looking forward to seeing the commoner student’s skills.”

Following that, the other professors began to agree about the match.

Although they said that nicely, frankly speaking, all they wanted was to see Lu Yun lose face. Furthermore, it was difficult for him to now reject them.

Although he could still reject it if he tried, after hearing what Tia said, Lu Yun also started to become curious about the skills and proficiency of his new commoner student.

“Okay then, I’ll let them go ahead with the battle.”

Volume 1 Chapter 13 – The Deciding Last Blow

Three minutes had already passed. Even if Ouyang Tao surrendered now, the truth was that he had already won.

But, after already withstanding it for so long, Ouyang Tao also felt less stressful — since I had already withstood for three minutes and there's less than two minutes left, I could grit my teeth and force this into a tie.

Ouyang Tao estimated that he still had five to six thousand units of magic left within him. If he forcibly squeezed it dry, the remaining time should not be a problem.

But now, Tia was in a position where she had to win. She no longer had any other option. This match was requested by her, and under the eyes of everyone, if she was forced to a draw by a new commoner student, she would lose all of her face.

(TL: Face is like prestige/honor/dignity)

Continuing to rely on the artillery guns for victory could no longer work. Tia used her trump card. She reinforced her magic: "Separate, modify, reconstruct!"

The six machines respectively dismantled and swiftly reconstructed into new units. They became four even stronger and bigger four legged machines — grade 2 standard machine, "Gunner".

The main purpose of Gunner was to serve as a mobile platform for heavy firepower cannons. Now, on top each four-legged machine was two attached heavy firepower cannons; all of them continued to fire towards Ouyang Tao, and suppressed him even more.

At the same time, Tia's trump card slowly crept towards Ouyang Tao under the cover of her fire.

Looking at the stage, Tia's former teacher Lu Yun saw clues of Tia's creation. On the left and right of Tia, she created an invisible aircraft.

But, these two machines could not be seen by Ouyang Tao: "Wow..... She already using those? Tsktsk....."

If one looked at Ouyang Tao once more, his magic units had nearly reached its limit. As long as Tia maintained her constant firepower for less than a minute, Ouyang Tao would be defeated due to the complete depletion of his magic — of course, all this could not be seen by Tia.

To be able to fare so well against the Academy's top warrior was already a job well done, but somehow, Lu Yun had the premonition that this commoner student still had potential..... Perhaps the best had yet to come.

It was already the final moments of the battle.

"Drats..... This is going nowhere! Heave... Ho..." Ouyang Tao's was already panting rapidly and barely held on. When the cannons stop firing for ten odd seconds a moment ago, he thought that his opponent had run out of magic. However, it seemed that what came after the first round was an even stronger barrage of attacks.

"Eh, that's weird?" Even though Ouyang Tao hid behind his protective wall, and his magic was being drained very quickly, this did not mean that he had no knowledge of what was happening outside, or that he had let his guard down. He continued to use his magic to perceive the situation outside.

Because his magic was too limited, he could only focus on defending from one side. Once the opponent attacked from other angles, he basically could no longer defend.

Now however, he realised that his opponents machines had reduced, but the firepower had instead increased. Looks like she's pulling out the real shots.

Then what about the two aircrafts?

Ouyang Tao could understand Tia's stand. If this battle was forced to a draw, Tia would be publicly embarrassed. Therefore, she sought for the win with all her might. In such a situation, she definitely would not let down on her attack.

Suddenly, the orb in Ouyang Tao's appeared to show some abnormal movement. He was surprised for a second before reacting immediately. He planted a defence unit behind him. Soon after, an explosion came from that direction.

"Bastard, Ugh..... What the hell was that!?" Ouyang Tao could not see anything, but there was something attacked him from the air. From the way it attacked, it was most likely a rocket launcher.

Heavy cannons pounded at his front and rockets attacking him from the back. It was the situation Ouyang Tao was most afraid of. He was forced into a two way defence. Not only did he need to split his concentration, his magic would be used up even more quickly. If that were the case, his magic would certainly not last till the end.

This cannot go on. At the very least, he had to get rid of the bastards at the back. Ouyang Tao guessed that his opponent must have used some camouflage technique. But he could break it using the simplest and most effective method: "Equip magnetic parts."

Ouyang Tao solely created a batch of defence units and added magnetism to them. Then he judged the opponent's position from their firing point, and used magic to send his defence units in that direction.

“Attract! Detonate!” Ouyang Tao manipulated his defence units with his hands and made them explode. After a series of explosion, two balls of fire dropped from mid air about ten metres away. They landed behind Ouyang Tao — — these were the two robots Tia used to secretly attack him.

“Ugh.....” However, Ouyang Tao did not have time to celebrate as blood rushed into his mouth and was then forcibly swallowed back by him — — this was the signal that meant he had overused his magic. It was at its limit and was about to finish.

After this, Ouyang Tao was really at his limit. The orb in his hand started to glow and fade. Every second that passed seemed like torture to Ouyang Tao.

Maybe I really can’t do it anymore. Maybe this is really my limit. Anyways, I’ve already did quite well — — at that moment, Ouyang Tao felt that, maybe it was unnecessary to hold on any longer.

But no matter what, fighting up to this stage, Ouyang Tao’s stubborn bull-like temper surfaced, and demanded that he should not surrender.

Suddenly, the frontal assault stopped. This let Ouyang Tao regain some breathing space. By chance, he saw the fallen aircraft and thought of a daring idea.

Boom Boom Boom..... As she watched her trump card get destroyed in front of her eyes, Tia was so shocked that even her cannons stopped firing.

“‘Vengeful Spirit’..... was actually defeated?!” To be capable of seeing through her self-invented light manipulation camouflage already made Tia surprised. But she didn’t expect her two grade 4 standard machine, ‘Vengeful Spirit’ to be destroyed.

This guy still has the energy to retaliate! — — At this point, Tia made a wrong judgement.

There was only a minute left, so Tia was left with no choice. She had to use the

best weapon that she was permitted to use in order to give her opponent an overwhelming blow required to end the match.

“Assemble!” Tia’s materials were swiftly being used up; her original machines were all torn apart and six robots that were about six metres tall soon began to be built — that was the grade 5 standard mecha “Gladiator”.

Gladiator did not have any long range weapons but that was compensated by having thick armour and arms that weighed about ten tonnes. It was used specifically against a fixed defence — that’s right, Tia wanted to use a straight forward disintegrating attack to break through Ouyang Tao’s protective wall.

However, Gladiators were slow and required more than ten seconds to create. Therefore, Tia placed her creation point just in front of Ouyang Tao’s protective wall.

Just a little more and the irritating wall will be destroyed, Tia thought. However, at this time.....

Boom, boom, boom..... There were a sudden series of explosions just around the gladiators creation point. Ouyang Tao used the same method he used to destroy the vengeful spirit to destroy the six half-built gladiators.

But that was really his final drop of magic.

Looking at the situation, Tia gritted her teeth. These final thirty seconds, must not drag on any longer!

“Instantaneous Creation!” Relying on her still ample magic units, Tia forcefully spent most of her magic. Immediately, a Gladiator was created in front of her. Then.....

In the final moments of the battle, everyone had their eyes glued onto the scene. They had all become excited because of the battle.

“Wah, what do you want to do!”

“Oi oi, it can’t be? So cruel?”

“Big Miss is angry, she wants to bury him here!”

The students felt this way because Tia had equipped this Gladiator with a rocket launcher and large amounts of magic bombs — in other words, she turned this machine into a suicide machine.

“It’s over!” Tia shouted out loud as the Gladiator that was filled with explosives and weighed more than ten tonnes flew towards Ouyang Tao’s protective wall, and knocked it into smithereens. This was followed by the sound of a loud explosion that echoed throughout the arena.

Beeeeep — At this point, the timer had just reached zero and the competition was over.

However the results were.....

Volume 1 Chapter 14 – Conclusion Of The Match

“WHAT! A DRAW?! NOOOO..... This can't be possible..... This absolutely cannot be possible!”

But time was up. According to what was shown on the screen, the match was a draw. Tia naturally found this result to be unacceptable.

She had already broke through Ouyang Tao's protective wall and even smashed it into smithereens. Under the impact of such an explosion, he should have lost his barrier and could not possibly be on stage anymore.

Also, if he was still here, where was he? Looking around the stage, there was nothing but Tia and a pile of ashes. Nothing else could be seen.

Not just Tia, even the other students and professors were shocked. If Ouyang Tao was still on stage, where was he?

While everyone was deeply discussing this, a noise stirred from the stage. Something that could not be seen dropped onto the floor. And with the removal of the light manipulation camouflage, Ouyang Tao could now be seen.

At this point, the youth's face was covered in ash while his body was stained with blood. He was seen slowly climbing out of the half destroyed vengeful spirit machine — he carried out emergency maintenance on the fallen vengeful spirit and hid inside it, thereby avoiding Tia's final blow.

After staggering for a few steps, his legs turned jelly and he collapsed on the floor as his chest rose and fell sharply.

“Hehe..... Haha..... Huhu..... Huha..... Huha.....” The lethargic Ouyang Tao opened his mouth widely, and from the sounds, one could not tell whether he was laughing or catching his breath. Even so, he held up his right hand and made a V sign in Lu Yun’s direction — that was his declaration of victory.

All the students watching seemed to have forgotten Ouyang Tao’s commoner status and were all clapping. Some even cheered out loud for him.

Lu Yun also found it hard to hide his happiness as he let out an obvious smile. He noticed that the protective charm at Ouyang Tao’s chest was dimmed, which also meant that he had cancelled the automated function in this disadvantaged battle.

This result was a significant setback for Tia. She stood rooted to the spot in a stunned manner — never had she ever thought that her trump card would become her opponent’s final trump card used to force a draw. This was so ironic!

The medical team immediately rushed onto stage, and prepared to lift Ouyang Tao onto a stretcher but was then rejected by him. He struggled for a bit before standing up. At the same time, two workers carrying score sheets entered the arena to let the participants sign — they had obviously had wanted to record the results for future reference.

Ouyang Tao saw the sheet. He had gotten an A-grade. However, it was commented that his attacking style was far too simplistic. Also, his use of materials and magic was far too excessive. But no matter what, this was a result that he was very satisfied with. He took the pen and signed it quickly.

However to Tia, C+ was a grade that was difficult for her to accept. Such a grade was like an insult to her.

Bastard, you better remember this! Tia turned and stared intently at the back of Ouyang Tao before gritting her teeth and signing on the score sheet.

After that, the participants left the stage. The magic array on stage activated and replenished all the materials used up, allowing the next match to continue.

Due to stubbornly insisting that he was fine and refusing to go onto the stretcher, the medical staff supported him down stage to the spectator seats: “Professor Lu.... I.... I....”

“You did very well. Don’t speak and sit down and rest.”

“Mn.....” Ouyang Tao nodded before his body went soft on the seat. The medical staff passed him an isotonic beverage and checked his injuries. They confirmed that it was only light injuries before leaving him.

All the students watching had already begun to discuss about the match.

On the other side, Tia was sitting silently at a corner of the spectator seats. However the upbringing of the daughter of nobility was indeed different. Even though she was furious, her face did not show much rage, there was only a little change in expression — Tia had to swiftly adjust her feelings and composure as there were still two more graded matches for her.

Lu Yun sat beside Ouyang Tao. He was originally unsure of which direction of training he should provide for Ouyang Tao but now, witnessing his outstanding performance, he had a rough lesson plan figured out for him.

However just before that, he was curious about some stuff and asked him: “Ouyang Tao, I saw that there was a light orb in your left hand the whole time. What was it for?”

“Ahh, that is..... That’s how I control all my creation and operation magic, and.....” Halfway through saying, he stopped and gulped down several mouths of his isotonic drink and continued: “And I also used it as a radar just now.”

“It has such a function?” Lu Yun had initially wanted to remind Ouyang Tao that he should not have too much actions in the midst of battle. However after listening to his explanation, Lu Yun changed his mind.

“Yeah. Because I combined various forms of control magic into it, therefore there was always excess magic leaking out to the surroundings. At the start I wanted to try and reduce the leak of magic. However, I found out later that by feeling the feedback for the magic, I could find out the situation of the surroundings without looking. Hence, I made a little improvisation. Luckily I had this function just now or I would not have found the two invisible machines.”

“Ohhh. So that’s it.....” But what Lu Yun was most interested in was actually Ouyang Tao’s last move. “Oh yeah, how did you repair the Vengeful Spirit?”

“I repaired it just like that.”

“Just like that?”

This time even Lu Yun was shocked.

Lu Yun understood Tia’s skill extremely well. All the machines and robot created by her had gone through several times of “personalisation”. Simply speaking, they all possess several technical details that Tia herself made. Light manipulation camouflage was one of her specialities, a secret technique of hers.

Furthermore, Tia was very detailed in her creations. All the key parts of her creation were installed with a self destruct function. Therefore, even if the other Mechanical Engineering students and even professors tried to research her creations, no one would be able to breakthrough her technique.

However, during the match’s time that limit that passed by like the speed of light, Ouyang Tao actually saw through her technique and cracked it!

This, was undeniably a rare talent!

“Actually, there are only certain key points that require some technique, mainly.....” Ouyang Tao just carried on talking but Lu Yun stopped him.

“It would be good enough as long as only you know about those things. No

need to say it out.” Lu Yun said as he signaled to Ouyang Tao with his eyes to look at the surroundings.

The other students were all focused on Ouyang Tao, waiting for him to divulge the details of Tia’s technique. When Ouyang Tao understood this, he stopped talking.

Lu Yun had started to become excited. If Ouyang Tao really had such a talent, with a bit of guidance, and some systematic training and advice, he would undoubtedly become a top class Mechanical Engineering Magician.

Although he had many good points, Ouyang Tao’s flaws were also very obvious.

Lu Yun muttered under his breath, analysing for Ouyang Tao as softly as possible: “Although you won the first match beautifully, but the next time, you won’t be so lucky. Currently, you have three big flaws.”

“Please say.”

“Firstly, it’s concerning your use of magic stones. Throughout the whole match, you nearly did not use any magic stones. Look at Tia, all her creations were fueled by magic stones. This way you could reduce your usage of magic.”

Just as Lu Yun said, throughout the whole match, Ouyang Tao totally did not use any magic stones: “Magic Stones..... Basically, I rarely interact with it. Which is why I didn’t really know how to use it. But you’re right, I’ll go and research about it.”

“Secondly, you really need to go learn about creating machines and robots. You can find out all the necessary information in the library.”

That’s right, one must start learning from the basics. Ouyang Tao nodded: “Okay, I’ll go research studiously.”

“Thirdly, you lack experience. Certain basic techniques of fighting aren’t there.

You need to practice more.”

“Yes, I realised that too.” Ouyang Tao was very self aware. If he wanted to create the machine Tia made, he predicted he would need up to three times the amount of time.

“Well, let’s see, we shall focus on these three things for your lessons for now. I shall help you set a detailed lesson plan and a timetable. You will complete the tasks using your own methods. How about it?”

“Mn, Thanks Professor Lu.”

With his future direction so clear, Ouyang Tao was very happy.

But at the same time, he realised that he had unconsciously accepted the idea of fighting in battles.

Volume 1 Chapter 15 – The Library Girl From Spirits

For all other purposes, although Ouyang Tao achieved favourable results in the first battle, the fact was that..... He shall now face an even bigger challenge much earlier than he was suppose to.

All students had to participate in a sparring match monthly, and based of the results of the match, they were graded and the grades would affect their end of year results.

Every start of a new term, midterm and end of term, students would have to battle their seniors in a guidance match. Similarly, the results are also recorded.

More importantly, because Ouyang Tao tied with Tia, it substantially decreased the amount of opponents for his future guidance matches.

Taking Go as an example, Ouyang Tao's situation today was as if he had a four Go advantage. Logically speaking, he should have a three Go advantage the next time. However, due to his performance, he was immediately promoted to an equal foothold.

What's worse was that from what his teacher said, Tia would definitely select him as her opponent next time, which was two and a half month from now.

Ouyang Tao had already felt Tia's skill first hand and knew her skill level well — she was indeed strong. Today's result was purely luck.

So, in order to not lose, within this two and a half months, Ouyang Tao had to put in one hundred and twenty percent of hard work.

Therefore Ouyang Tao's teacher had given him three tasks. The first one was to learn the structures of basic machines and robots, and how to construct them. The second one was to learn how to use magic stones as a source of energy. At the same time, he saw that Ouyang Tao specialised in defending and therefore, his third task was to improve his defense techniques.

Other than those tasks, Ouyang Tao also had a series of daily training programs he had to accomplish. He had to practice using his magic, do physical exercise, and learn social etiquette, etcetera.

In conclusion, the amount of work he had to do in this two and a half months was astronomical.

Lu Yun knew that Ouyang Tao was not suited to sit down and listen to a lesson. Hence, he gave him the freedom to plan how he wanted to learn by himself. Furthermore, he put down the restriction that only when Ouyang Tao met with a technical difficulty, or during his weekly reports, was he then allowed to find him and ask questions.

Also, although Ouyang Tao did not realise it, he had already gotten used to battles. That was because his fighting spirit had been fired up. Since he tied on his first match, he didn't allow himself to lose his next battle.

Therefore, the first thing that he needed to do was to study how to use magic stones and learn the basic foundations of creating a machine. Simply put it, he needed to read.

Read where? Of course it's the library. It was already noon when he finished watching the battles between the other students. Ouyang Tao said farewell to his teacher and left for the canteen to have a good meal to replenish his strength. Also, he felt that he had almost recovered from the lethargy after the battle.

And so, he sprinted to the library.

Augustus Academy's Library was a massive building that took up more than ten hectares of space. The main building was a twin tower which was mainly blue in colour, like water putting out a fire. The main building used a double eaved format, with a peacock blue glazed tile roof, a pale gray ceramic tile outer wall, granite stone steps, and white marble railings. This made it seem ancient, yet majestic.

Since the first day Ouyang Tao entered school, he had already wanted to come here. He couldn't wait to come here to acquire knowledge.

Entering the hall of the library, Ouyang Tao instantly saw the map and summary of the library — Oh boy, adding the basements and the levels, there were twenty storeys used to store books, scrolls and case studies. All this amounted to millions and millions of copies.

So many books?! What the hell..... Ouyang Tao felt as if he was suddenly thrown into a forest, and did not know where to start.

Luckily, Lu Yun had already prepared beforehand. Ouyang Tao removed a checklist from his pockets. The checklist was filled with reference books that Lu Yun had listed — even though there were a lot, but at the very least, he knew where to start.

Passing through the halls, he entered the first floor of the library. Going to the counter, he saw a girl dressed in black sitting there. On the counter was a golden plaque that wrote "Manager". It appeared that she was the person in charge.

As he got closer to the counter, Ouyang Tao realised that girl was not in uniform. Instead, she was wearing a flowery white dress with a black cardigan, but in front of her chest was a school emblem — the cross that signified death and redemption, it was the Spirit Department's Emblem.

Seeing that emblem made chills run down his spine.

The Spirit Department communicated with souls. They specialise in talking to the dead. Things like death very easily evoked a person to instinctively be fearful.

Also, being associated with demons and ghosts — — as far as an ordinary person was concerned, the Spirit Department was a true ghost story.

The girl in front of Ouyang Tao didn't seem to be aware of his presence, and read the book intently. Her presence was weak. If not for the rustling from the flipping of pages, Ouyang Tao might have really treated her as a spirit. This made him shudder.

Eventually, Ouyang Tao gathered his courage and went ahead to the counter: "Excuse me....."

"Mn?" The girl finally lifted up her head, giving Ouyang Tao a clear view of her face.

This was a face without makeup. She had crystal-like glistening skin that shone in white light. Coupled with an expressionless face, it made Ouyang Tao think of one word — — cold.

The most outstanding feature the girl had were her eyes. Her pupils were a complete pale blue — — that was the basic gift of someone from the Spirits Department. They had a psychic eye that could see spirits.

However, when they were not using their spiritual eye, their eye should be the same as normal people. It was the first time Ouyang Tao saw someone's eyes permanently in the spiritual eye state.

Aside from the fact that she was expressionless, and kept her spiritual eye constantly open, this manager ought to be regarded as a beauty...

"Need something?"

"Ummm, ahhhhh....." He muttered under his breath to compose himself. It was then he realised the girl was staring at him. "Sorry, but I'm looking for these books."

As Ouyang Tao said that, he handed out the checklist with both hands. The girl

manager did not take it, but merely said to an invisible something: “Get it for me.”

As she finished, the checklist suddenly floated of Ouyang Tao’s hands and towards the girl manager. She glanced at the checklist before quickly turning to Ouyang Tao and faintly said: “All of it?”

“.....” Ouyang Tao hesitated for a while, there were more than a hundred books on the checklist. There was no need to find all of them. “Help me find a few of these then.....”

Ouyang Tao told her a few books that are about the basics of machines creation and the theory behind magic stones. She nodded and closed her eyes. A second later, she reopened them and said: “It’s at level four, section C and D, the will-o’-wisp will guide you there.”

Will-o’-wisp!? Don’t scare people..... Ouyang Tao was shocked by what the girl said. However, her attention had already returned to her book.

The feeling that the girl gave off was indeed scary. Ouyang Tao decided to not ask too much and went to quickly find his book.

A while after Ouyang Tao entered the library, he found two interesting points. Firstly, it was huge. Secondly, it was quiet — because of these two points, the atmosphere of the library was very scary.

In the huge library, Ouyang Tao did not see anyone other than the manager. Other than the sound of his footsteps, there were no other noise. The silence made the library very creepy. Even a 2.3 meter tall guy like Ouyang Tao was so scared that he hugged his arms in fright.

Ouyang Tao sped up his footsteps. He wanted to leave the place as soon as he found the books. Soon, he found the light blue will-o’-wisp burning in front of a book shelf. When he walked over, he saw that it was at the book he wanted to borrow — 《The Basics of Magic Stone Usage》

Once Ouyang Tao obtained his book, the will-o'-wisp disappeared. Although it was a bit frightening, he had to admit that the manager was very considerate. Soon, under the guidance of the will-o'-wisp, Ouyang Tao found all the books he needed.

Then, Ouyang Tao seemed to have heard some movement. It sounded like someone was sweeping. This caused the burden in his heart to be lifted since he realised that there was a living person here.

However, when he turned.....

“WAHHHHHHHH— — !!!” Ouyang Tao suddenly screamed. He was so frightened that he slumped to the ground. The books that were previously in his hand scattered all over the floor — — There wasn't even anyone there, it was only a broom and dustpan that swept the floor by itself.

“Please keep quiet in the library.” Luckily, when Ouyang Tao was frightened, the voice of the girl manager descended from the sky. “Also, that's just routine cleaning. No need to be frightened.”

YOU SHOULD'VE SAID THAT EARLIER! — — Ouyang Tao wanted to shout it out loud. But after thinking about it, he decided to choke back his complaint. Spirit Magicians were capable of controlling ghosts. As a librarian, using a few ghosts to help her do maintenance should be pretty common. Also, as he thought about what happened at the counter, Ouyang Tao finally heaved a sigh of relief.

I shouldn't stay here too long, better hurry..... Ouyang Tao picked up the books and quickly left.

But, wanting to leave, was it that easy.....

Volume 1 Chapter 15.5 – Interval #5

Working as a Professor at Augustus Academy was not just limited to the simple job of teaching a student.

In fact, a student interacts with a professor for at most three hours a day. After that, the professor has more important work to do.

Due to the fact that both the Augustus Academy military school and magic school's dual nature, all the school large scale laboratory and practice arenas were well equipped with the latest facilities. Furthermore, they were updated each month (thanks to the convenience of having Mechanical Magicians), all members of the school could use it after applying for it.

However, these were only the facilities above ground. The underground secrets of the academy were only known to the professors, some of the higher grade teachers, members of the Council, and the few graduate students.

Lu Yun opened the hidden door from behind a bookshelf in his office at the administration building. He took the elevator down six hundred metres to Augustus Academy's huge underground research facility, which took up even more space than the structures above ground.

There was strict security for the underground research facility with a gate and a security checkpoint every forty metres. Each research area was separated, and as a precaution, every professor possessed a key card that could only open a certain gate that leads to their own exclusive research area.

Everyone who were allowed to enter the research area had to follow a strict

secrecy protocol. One could only discuss work with someone who worked in the same research area. They had to keep it a secret from someone in a different research area.

That also meant that everyone only knew a part of the whole research.

However, there was one point that everyone knew clearly. And it was that this research was the world's strongest and most secret of technology — it was something that rivalled the divine beings; the lost science and technology.

Lu Yun was responsible for a device called the Phase Teleportation Crystal.

Arriving at the research facility, a topless muscular man, who was two metres tall, was already waiting there — he was a professor from the Blacksmithing department, and was also Lu Yun's colleague.

"Professor Lu, you're a bit late today."

"Ah, my apologies. My new student's basics are still lacking, so I had some things to sort out."

"No worries. Actually you're just on time, Trial No. 6744 is prepared for testing." As he said that, he handed Lu Yun a pair of protective goggles.

"Ok, let's see the results."

In front of the two was a sealed testing work space. A mechanical arm placed a hexagonally cut crystal into the designated slot.

After which, the slot started to charge the crystal, and channel magic into it. The crystal glowed brightly, and started to gradually float.

"The charging has already reached eighty five percent. The numbers are still very stable, looks like there's a chance."

“Mn, yeah.”

However, just as they finished talking, a loud explosion came from the testing workspace. A bright light shone and even though they were wearing protective eyewear, they both turned and shielded their eyes with their hands.

“Aish, it’s like this again. As long as it gets close to ninety percent it can’t hold on.” The muscular Blacksmithing professor shook his head in disappointment.

“Let’s collect the data before we start again.” Lu Yun could only smile bitterly as he said that. They failed nearly seven thousand times already, so one more time would not make much of a difference.

“Ok..... It’s embarrassing though.....” The muscular professor sighed as he scratched his head in distress and looked around in disappointment. “Even with all of us added up together, it probably wouldn’t even be able to enough to match that man’s feet.....”

“Hehe..... Professor Fang, don’t be so pessimistic.”

“I think that you’re amazing. You can still remain optimistic. There isn’t anyone other than you who understands that person’s abilities.”

The “person” that Professor Fang mentioned was none other than Lu Yun’s mentor — He was the magnificent man who built this underground facility, and the man who had been in charge, the lost science and technology expert called the genius — Lin Shixiong

However, after Lin Shixiong left, the entire research facility went into a stalemate. Even after gathering all the elites of Augustus Academy to form a research team, they could not make any breakthrough.

It was no exaggeration to say that without Lin Shixiong, the research facility was completely useless.

“Okay, Professor Fang, rather than talking about, let’s just carry on with our

work. The experiment data from just now is already here.” Lu Yun only smiled slightly, and deliberately acted as if he didn’t really mind.

“Okay, let’s carry on.”

However, Lu Yun knew the real reason behind their failure better than anyone — — because his teacher Lin Shixiong had destroyed all the key data and technical parts before he left.

Volume 1 Chapter 16 – Concentrate And You'll Lose Track Of Time

“No library card, not allowed to borrow.”

“Ahhhh.....”

Ouyang Tao opened his mouth, but he was speechless.

He had originally wanted to quickly leave this creepy and quiet place that was filled with spirits, after borrowing the books, to slowly read them back in his dormitory. However, because he did not have a library card, he had no choice but to read it in the library.

What was even worse was that the library card needed one month to be issued.

This meant that, not just today, but also during the next month, Ouyang Tao would have to read in the library.

Oh gosh, don't tell me I have to read in this haunted place for a month? Ouyang Tao's heart could not cope with this, but he had no choice.

However, the manager did not care about Ouyang Tao's distress. She only continued: “There are chairs and table everywhere for you to read. Please help yourself.”

With that, she went back to focus on the book in her hand.

There were indeed many study desks for students to read in the library. These desks were even equipped with a lamp, pen holder, foolscap paper, notebooks, drawing tools and other stationery. However at such an empty and haunted place, how could one keep calm enough to read.

Ouyang Tao had no choice. He hugged the books and chose a desk close to the manager — at least when there's someone close by, I won't get too shocked at the appearance of another spirit.

But Ouyang Tao felt very weird. Why is it that no one visited the library of such an important place? Didn't anyone read? They couldn't have been scared away by this manager girl right.....

As he thought about these insignificant things, he sat down at the table, and flipped his book with one hand while recording notes with the other.

In the past, his techniques were all reliant on his own talent and the remains of his memories and past experiences, imitation and some knowledge obtained from books. Such detailed and systematic data was something he did not have a chance to interact before.

After reading for a while, Ouyang Tao already felt as if he had struck gold and completely forgot about the haunted library and any sense of time.

After reading about the basics of how to use magic stones, Ouyang Tao felt that he had learnt much more. Magic Stones were minerals capable of supplying magical energy. If he could use Magic Stones as fuel or even directly absorb the power of Magic Stones, he could reduce his magic consumption by a large amount.

As he finished that book, he picked up another book 《Basic Machine Creation Grade 1》 and started reading.

During the battle with Tia, Ouyang Tao realised that the machines she created

were all pre-designed. Furthermore, she kept re-creating them, making her experienced in the use of machines. Ouyang Tao finally understood why.

Actually, basic machines and equipment have a pre-existing blueprint, and they were categorized into 15 different grades based on their battle capabilities. Battle machinery were split into two categories, machines and weapons. They were all used semi-independently and were therefore interchangeable, suiting different battle needs.

At the same time, the machines could be modified according to the user. One example would be Tia's Vengeful Spirit which used Light Manipulation camouflage. Thinking about the battle before, Tia's maximum creation grade was restricted to 5, which also meant that she could not even bring out one third of her actual strength.

As he thought of this, Ouyang Tao's desire to win rose to another level. Obviously, if he wanted to remain undefeated the next time, he would have to buck up.

Ouyang Tao was fully concentrated on his reading and studies. As he finished a book, he picked up another and continued.

The other person in the library was silent as well, as she quietly flipped the pages of the book in her hand.

Time passed quickly under the tranquility of the library, when Ouyang Tao had finished reading.....

"Ugh....." As he looked at the time, Ouyang Tao nearly screamed in shock once again. However, as if the manager girl had predicted it, she was already looking at him.

Without talking and without showing any emotion, the girl tried to convey a "quiet please" desire. Ouyang Tao understood it and immediately covered his mouth.

Unknowingly, it was already 11:30 p.m. Ouyang Tao wondered why no one visited in such a long time. However, now was not the time to think about that as Ouyang Tao grabbed the books preparing to return them to their original location.

“Just leave it there.” The manager girl said. As she lifted her hand, the books floated out of Ouyang Tao’s hands and disappeared. The stationery on the desk also reverted to its original position.

Fortunately, Ouyang Tao did not lose his composure this time because of his previous experience.

However, Ouyang Tao thought it was weird. From his memory, the sign outside wrote that the library would close at 5:30 p.m.

Could it be that because of him, she stayed here all this time? That would be embarrassing!

As Ouyang Tao walked over to the manager girl’s counter, she lifted up her head: “Is anything wrong?”

“That..... I..... My apologies, because of me, the closing of the library was delayed.....” Ouyang Tao sincerely apologised.

“No worries.” The manager girl did not seem to mind. “I belong here.”

“Ahh?”

“You’re welcome to come again.” She said as she looked down and continued reading.

“Oh, then I won’t disturb you. Rest early.” After Ouyang Tao said that, he turned and left. He himself did not know why he said the last sentence.

Although it was a bit creepy, the librarian was quite responsible.

Even though there was no change in her expression, Ouyang Tao felt that the girl revealed a bit of loneliness near the end. Why did no one visit the library? These thoughts kept bothering him.

As he left the library, the outside was nearly empty. There were only street lamps lighting up the road. The free buses had already stopped their service at 8 p.m. and Ouyang Tao's dormitory in the special district was at least one kilometre away.

What else could I do? Walk I guess.....

Augustus Academy was very quiet in at night but the atmosphere was unlike the ghastly library. There was no curfew the students had to abide by, therefore, one would occasionally hear the small talk of lovers in the bushes or the small forests.

Augustus Academy did not restrict relationships between students so therefore, the night was the best rendezvous time.

"Hey, chickie, is there something going on between you two?"

"Yeah, I didn't expect this kid to know his stuff. He actually got such a fresh chick."

Such speech that sounded like hooligans' bullying was suddenly picked up by Ouyang Tao. This caused him to slow down his steps.

It can't be? Such a prestigious academy had this kind of people? Should I care?

"Don't be like that, we're friends who had just met. Please don't make it difficult for her....." The bullied party spoke, but sounded very weak.

"Did I ask you? Scram aside!"

This was followed by the sounds of a beating. Ouyang Tao could not take this anymore and clenched his fist tight.

“Don’t go overboard! Let’s see, how should I deal with you two!”

“Yo, this chick is pretty spicy.”

“Come, I want to see how you deal with us.”

Uh? This voice..... It can’t be!

Ouyang Tao immediately sprinted into the small forest.....

Volume 1 Chapter 17 – The Dispute In The Small Forest

The strong bullying the weak in small scaled terms would only be between people. In a larger scale, it would be bullying between countries.

However, for people who were able to enter Augustus Academy, even if they weren't nobility, they would at least be well educated. Logically speaking, they should be well mannered and something like bullying should not happen. Furthermore, in order to prevent students from using magic to cause trouble, the school strictly prohibits students to use magic outside designated areas, severely punishing any culprits that got caught.

But obviously, Ouyang Tao was wrong.

He would not bully people and at the same time, also knew that being bullied was not a good feeling. But if he saw injustice, he would naturally have to help the weaker side.

Especially if the one being bullied was his sister.

As he rushed into the small forest. He saw the boy sprawled on the ground, and his sister stood in front of the boy. They were being surrounded by six to seven male students, and they looked like they were about to fight.

Seeing the situation, Ouyang Tao immediately shouted: "What are you doing!"

Although he did manage to pause the impending fight, when they saw that

Ouyang Tao was alone, their rage rekindled and the guy leading the pack asked in disdain: “Brat, who are you?”

Relying on the weak lighting, Ouyang Tao saw who the other party was. One was his senior in the Mechanical Engineering Department. The guy on the floor also seemed to be the same.

“It doesn’t matter who I am. To dare bully my sister, you must be tired of living!” Magic aside, if it was just fighting alone, Ouyang Tao was not afraid to go up against large numbers.

“Tch, just a hero trying to save his sister. You don’t even see that you’re alone and even dare to come out.” Seeing that Ouyang Tao was alone, the other party looked down on him.

“Oi, I recognise him. He’s the kid who tied with Big Miss today.” Suddenly, someone said this sentence out loud.

“..... You don’t say, even your daddy here has recognised him. Don’t shoot off your mouth.” The leader of the pack kept quiet for a few seconds before pushing the guy who talked away, and started to crack his knuckles. “What’s there to be scared off? Since he can’t use magic, who cares who he is. Just attack!”

Seeing that the fight could not be avoided, Ouyang Tao didn’t care anymore. If it was a fight, he was not afraid. Anyone who dared to bully Ah Xue, even if I’m not their match, even if I have to bite them, I must make them see blood!

“Fighting in a group you would minimally receive a penalty of sixty demerit points, and would have to volunteer at the library for a month. Think carefully before you fight. This time, someone else appeared to stop the fight, and actually prevented it.

“Drats, it’s the inspection team.”

“Enough, let’s go.”

“Yeah, The library isn’t anywhere good.”

The two saviours were coincidentally the two seniors from the same dormitory as Ouyang Tao; Monica and Chen Feng. Both of them had an armband with “Discipline” written on their right sleeve — This was a responsibility of the Magic Swordsmanship Department and the Graduate students. They took shifts to patrol the school at night to maintain order and discipline. Formally, they were known as the “Disciplinary Team” but many students call the the “Inspection Team”.

The disciplinary group had a lot of authority. Once you broke the rules and were caught by them, you would definitely be punished severely. Furthermore, a group fight would receive one of the more severe of punishments. If one participated in it, no matter how much, they would be subjected to punishment.

In any case, the two seniors had helped Ouyang Tao out, so he immediately thanked them: “Thank you, my two seniors.”

“You’re welcome. Me and Chen Feng were just about to change shifts when we heard you shout and came to look.” Monica said as he saw the two behind Ouyang Tao: “These two are.....”

The bullied boy stood up and thankfully bowed at Monica and Chen Feng before sprinting off.

“Oi! You..... Sheesh..... Really.....” Ouyang Xue seemed to be calling out to the boy but he had already run away.

“Little girl, you should be from the Elements Department right. It’s already so late, what were you doing with someone from Mechanical Engineering?” Monica asked Ouyang Xue — the same thing Ouyang Tao wanted to ask.

It’s only her second day at school, it couldn’t be that his sister was already the target of other people’s affections? And they were together at such a late time. As her brother, Ouyang Tao could not help but worry.

“That..... I..... I originally wanted to take a look at the practice arena, but then I saw that Senior. He kept saying that I didn’t use my Windball properly. We started arguing; as we argued, we found out that we got along well and we unknowingly spoke for too long. He said he wanted to see me back to the dorm since it was already this late, so we took a shortcut through the small forest to then meet with that bunch. Then brother and you two seniors appeared.”

Ouyang Xue explained everything in one breath, and it made Ouyang Tao feel a bit more relieved — — looks like it’s only a misunderstanding.

But when he thought about it, something felt off. What would someone from the Mechanical Engineering Department and his sister from the Elements Department talk about for so long? What happened?

Monica however, seemed to have understood and nodded: “Ohhh, so it’s like that..... Speaking of which, you two are siblings?”

“Yes, she’s my sister Ouyang Xue.”

“Yeah, he’s my brother Ouyang Tao.”

“You don’t look alike, but that doesn’t matter.” Suddenly, Monica grabbed Ouyang Xue and hugged her. “So cuteeeee~”

“Ehh? Ahhh! NOO! Bro save me!!” Suddenly being hugged caused Ouyang Xue to be shocked and she struggled violently, but due to the difference in stature, it was to no avail.

“Don’t worry little girl! Let Big Sister hug you.” Monica seemed to really like Ouyang Xue. She hugged tighter and even rubbed her face against Ouyang Xue’s. “Wahh, as cute as a doll, I want to hug you home~”

Chen Feng, who was watching on the side, could only shake his head as if saying “Here we go again..... I can’t really do anything about this fellow.”

Ouyang Tao could not deny that his sister was cute, and even envied Monica.

Being a girl must be nice.....

After a while, Chen Feng thought that she fooled around enough and pulled Monica away from Ouyang Xue.

However, it seems that Monica had not shown enough “affection” yet, and continued: “Since it’s already so late, why don’t you join us back at our dormitory.”

“Ah? Together? What does it mean?” Ouyang Xue hid behind her brother in fright — — She must have felt that she might get eaten up by Monica.

However, what Monica suggested was worth considering. It was already very late, and such a thing had just happened. Ouyang Tao didn’t feel that it was safe to let his sister go back alone. Seeing her back would also take up too much time. Letting her sleep over was actually a good idea.

“I think that’s a pretty good idea. Ah Xue, just stay with me tonight.”

“Eh? Bro..... Big Bro..... You mean that..... Can’t..... You can’t mean.....” Hearing this, Ouyang Xue looked as though she suffered a huge shock. She was speaking gibberish and her two small hands continuously shook. “No..... Since we aren’t blood related, it’s not wrong..... But I’m not ready..... But I’m fine if you want.....”

Ouyang Xue obviously misunderstood something (even though Ouyang Tao did say it quite suggestively). When thinking about her dormitory’s private space, and them sharing..... Her imagination ran wild.

Ouyang Tao didn’t know what his sister was thinking, but it seemed that he had to clarify: “Ah Xue are you okay? What I meant was that my dormitory still has an empty guest room. If you’re not willing then forget it.”

When the misunderstanding cleared, Ouyang Xue was stunned for a moment: “Not..... Not sleeping together?”

“What are you imagining.” Ouyang Tao poked his sister’s head.

“So it’s this kind of relationship. Hehehe.....” Monica mumbled to herself. From the conversation, she roughly understood the sibling’s relationship. “Okay okay, you siblings should stop flirting here. It’s not early anymore, let’s go.”

And thus, the four of them started their journey back to the dormitory.

Volume 1 Chapter 18 – The Dormitory's Serenade

“Wow, these are actually your dormitories! I thought that they were for the professors.” Seeing that the dormitories in the special zone were actually villas, Ouyang Xue found it hard to hide her shock.

Ouyang Tao completely understood his sister's astonishment as he remembered that on the day he first came, he stood outside of the door for a long time, not daring to enter: “Hehe, yeah! I felt the same way on my first day.”

Then, Ouyang Xue looked behind and saw that Monica and Chen Feng were still behind them. Monica waved at her while teasingly sticking out her tongue. This caused Ouyang Xue to turn away immediately: “But why are the two seniors still following.....”

“Because they stay here too.” Ouyang Tao replied like it was obvious.

“Boys..... Boys and girls staying together?”

“The four rooms are split apart, and this is actually a four man dormitory. You can't expect me to live in such a large villa alone, right.”

“Ohhh.....”

Walking into the villa, ah no, dormitory made Ouyang Tao relax all of a sudden. He felt like he was home. His sister Ouyang Xue was curious and surprised, and went to explore every room on the first floor.

“Wahh, it’s so big! And it has everything.”

Afraid that his sister might play too much because she was so happy, Ouyang Tao kindly reminded her: “Okay, it’s late already, go bathe and rest. There’s still lessons tomorrow.”

“Ummm…… Bro……” Ouyang Xue embarrassingly tugged at her brother’s sleeve.

“What’s wrong?”

“I haven’t eaten dinner yet……”

As if being reminded by his sister, Ouyang Tao suddenly remembered that because he had read too long, he also had not eaten dinner yet.

“Hearing you say that, I feel a bit hungry too. Having patrolled for half a day, I want a midnight snack.” Monica said as she took the opportunity to gently kick at Chen Feng, “Chen Feng, what about you, do you want something to eat?”

Chen Feng nodded as well. The lessons of the Magical Swordsmanship were all high leveled training which used up a lot of energy. Therefore, not only did Chen Feng have the habit of eating midnight snacks, he also had a large appetite.

“Okay then, I will make something. Ah Xue you go and bathe first.” Ouyang Tao said and put on his apron as he walked into the kitchen. Chen Feng followed him in and picked up the kitchen knife, and seemed to have the intention to help with the food. He waited for Ouyang Tao to bring out the ingredients.

Ouyang Tao thought for a while before deciding: “Let’s make a mixed seafood curry. I’ll cook the rice and curry. Could Senior help me with the vegetables?”

Chen Feng nodded his head and then took out the carrots, potatoes, and yams to swiftly begin the process.

Since Monica was free, she rushed to Ouyang Xue and smiled sheepishly: “Hehe, let the boys deal with supper while we take a bath together, little girl.”

“But I don’t have a change of clothes……”

“Use big sister’s then.”

“Eh!? AHFFF — — !”

Not waiting for Ouyang Xue’s response, Monica had already carried her and sprinted towards the bathroom.

“Wah, little girl, come, let big sister see your figure.”

“Senior, don’t be like this. I can remove my clothes by myself.”

“It doesn’t matter, we’re both girls anyway.”

“But, this is very weird, ahhh, there…… Noooo, Yiyahhhh — — !”

“Heehee, you’re too cute.”

“Brooo, save meeee — — !”

“It’s no use, just obediently come into the arms of big sis. Here I come~”

The playing sounds of the two girls in the bathroom was clearly heard by Ouyang Tao in the kitchen, and made his imagination run wild.

If Monica was a guy, Ouyang Tao would definitely storm in to save his sister.

Just as the curry had finished cooking, the two girls had also come out of the bathroom. Monica had a face of satisfaction while Ouyang Xue looked down and pursed her lips. Her whole face was red in embarrassment and she looked as if

she was about to cry as she walked to her brother.

“Uuuu..... Bro..... I can’t get married anymore.....”

“Hehe, okay okay, it’s not so serious.” Ouyang Tao could only gently touch his sister’s head to calm her down.

“That’s right, little girl, you will definitely marry someone. If not, let big sis marry you.”

“Wahhhh — — ! Bro save me!!”

Monica looked like she was about to pounce onto Ouyang Xue, and scared the young girl. She immediately hid behind her brother.

However, that was not enough to stop Monica.

“Hehe, it’s no use. I will eat your brother up as well. He can be my appetizer.”

“Nooooo — — !”

Senior is really going overboard today. But how come I’m pulled into the picture as well..... Ouyang Tao could not help it as well.

Luckily, Chen Feng knocked on the dining table, which helped the Ouyang siblings to get out of the difficult situation. Monica temporarily stopped her teasing.

“Okay okay. I know I know. But she’s really cute.” Obviously, Monica had no sense of remorse at all.

The rice smelled fragrantly and the mixed seafood curry was also spicy, yet bore the sweet taste of the vegetables. It tasted just right. Ouyang Xue seemed to have forgotten what had happened and was eating quickly. Despite her small stature, she had already finished three bowls.

“Mn, it’s nice! Bro’s meals are the best.”

“Eat slowly. There’s still a lot left.”

“The taste is pretty good, little junior, give me another bowl~” Monica’s appetite was even bigger as this was already her fifth bowl.

Chen Feng also passed his empty bowl over to collect his tenth bowl of rice.

The four of them finished three kilograms of rice and a huge pot of curry.

After eating, Chen Feng again, knocked on the table to prevent Monica’s attempt to sleep with Ouyang Xue. Because each person’s room had a living room and a restroom, Ouyang Tao placed his sister in the guest room before packing up the area.

Chen Feng also went upstairs to rest, and left Monica to help Ouyang Tao.

“I feel embarrassed for eating and using your stuff for free, so I can’t just throw the rest of the work on you, little junior.”

Ouyang Tao understood the “eat” part but what did the “use” part mean? She can’t be talking about my sister..... Forget it, Ouyang Tao felt that it was better to not think too much about it.....

Although sometimes Monica took her jokes rather far, she was still a caring and passionate big sister. Furthermore, she was a graduate student which made her even more dependable.

Therefore, Ouyang Tao had a few worries that he hoped to clarify with her. While washing the pot, he asked: “Oh yeah, Monica senior, may I ask you a few things?”

Monica easily agreed: “Sure, just ask.”

“Why doesn’t anyone go to the library? And the manager..... She seems very weird.....”

“Oh, the library. Because there are some secret invisible things in here. And most of the books have already been read numerous times before people entered the academy. That’s why no one goes. Furthermore, everyone has a multi-purpose crystal ball nowadays which is much more convenient. But if you go the activity centre’s magazine section, there should be some people.”

“Ohh.....” It looks like it’s not that people aren’t hardworking, but that most students in the school already have a solid foundation.

Moreover, if one had anything they wanted to find, the multi-purpose crystal ball would suffice. There was no specific need to go to the library.

“However, speaking of the girl in the library.....” Monica laughed mysteriously, and spoke in a spooky tone, “Now that’s a long and scary story. Are you sure you want to hear it?”

Volume 1 Chapter 18.5 – Interval #6

Among the group of students from Mechanical Engineering who had conflict with the Ouyang siblings, several had already left. The remaining three people had not yet returned to their dormitories. They decided to have a drink to quell their anger.

The three of them found a quiet and empty area and took out their private bottle of hard liquor (Augustus Academy allowed light consumption of alcohol but binge drinking was prohibited) and began drinking. They complained as they drank.

“Tch, what dumb luck. We actually met the inspection team.”

“I agree. And we actually met the ‘mute sword’ and the monster girl.”

“Yeah, if it weren’t those two, who cares if they are from the inspection team. Daddy here’ll beat them up!”

The mute sword and monster girl naturally meant Chen Feng and Monica. Chen Feng’s actual title in the Magic Swordsmanship department was “Silent Blade”, but because he could not talk, many people called him mute sword instead. As to why Monica was called monster girl; anyone who faced her weird power and fighting style would agree to it.

However, people like these two were the ones who were able to scare the delinquents and maintain the school discipline.

“And that brat from Mechanical Engineering. At the end of the month scoring

match, Daddy will go look for him!”

“That’s right, let’s first teach him a lesson before getting his sister. Haha.....”

“Haha.....”

Just when the group was talking trash, a strong and deep voice that had an arrogant tone suddenly rang: “You guys, are you prepared to receive your punishment!?”

Following the voice was an immense pressure that was never seen before. That person’s magic was strong beyond description. The guys suddenly became nervous as they hurriedly try to make out where the voice came from.

The man who spoke did not appear but the sounds of his heavy footsteps could be heard. This was accompanied by a scorching heat in the atmosphere.

“What? He dare use magic?”

“It can’t be the inspection team right?”

“Of course not, no one in the inspection team are from Elements.”

The guys were extremely unsettled as the speaker finally appeared from the darkness. He wore an exaggerating red ancient robe, a cape, a black ceremonial hat, and a mask. He gave off a scary and overpowering aura.

“Oi, who are you?”

Instead of answering, the other guy lifted his arms slightly: “Burn, my flames of judgement!”

A fiery red flame suddenly ignited in the surroundings, and formed a five to six meters flame wall that trapped all four in it.

Moreover, he also ignited flames in his hands and closed in on the three Mechanical Engineering students.

“Damn, it’s not like daddy is afraid of you! Brothers, let’s get him!” The leader of the pack was not weak either as he created an ice ball preparing to fight. The other two with him prepared their magic as well.

Although a Mechanical Engineering Magician was a person who could build an entire army for battle, from another perspective, if the opposition gets rid of the Magician, it would mean getting rid of an entire army.

Furthermore, a Mechanical Engineering Magician was limited to the amount of resources he had. Therefore, it was inconvenient to apply in some places. Hence, other than Mechanical Engineering, most Mechanical Engineering Magicians knew some other form of common magic for self-defense.

Of course someone like Ouyang Tao, who didn’t know how to use any other form of magic was a rare exception.

Then, the flames and the ice clashed into one another.

“Ugh..... What flame is this.....”

“Too strong..... Who is he!”

“Oi, what are you doing! You seriously can’t be thinking of killing right!”

The difference in skill was too overwhelming, but the other party did not break through the three people’s ice defence. He only used sufficient strength to control his fire, and while using this unblockable magic, forced the three people to slowly be pushed back towards the fire wall.

Not only did he want to defeat his opponents, he wanted his opponents to experience the fear of slowly approaching their deaths.

To him, that was true judgement.....

Volume 1 Chapter 19 – Big Sister’s Question And Answer Session

Too long to finish, and a super scary story — if it was someone else telling him, Ouyang Tao might have taken it as a joke or a prank. However, if it was about the Spirit girl in the library, it would be difficult to judge.

Furthermore, when the bully group heard about the library punishment, the reaction of the Mechanical Engineering students also proved a point.

However, Ouyang Tao was really concerned and eventually his curiosity took over him. Wanting to hear the stories, he nodded: “Then..... Just tell me a little bit.”

“Keke, you’re actually willing to hear.” Monica’s expression suddenly relaxed — looks like she was really joking just before.

“Well, because I’m concerned. How should I put it. That manager seems a bit..... Lonely, maybe even pitiful.”

“What you just said isn’t wrong. Well, I guess telling you a bit is no harm.” Monica said as she became serious: “However, always remember, never ever tell anyone about it.”

“Oh.....”

“That girl’s name is Zhao Yuehan. Although she’s definitely not older than your sister, because she skipped several grades, she’s already in the same grade as

me. She's a graduate student from the Spirits department. Even though she's a cute young lady, we don't click."

Looks like Monica is selective in her targets, but that's not important. The main point is "skipped several grades": "Does that mean..... That her magic's very powerful?"

"Not just that, this girl's very special. She's not a normal magician. You could even say she's not a normal human being." As Monica spoke, her hand stopped doing work and she lit up a cigarette.

In the end, Ouyang Tao was the only one washing the dishes.

"Not a normal human being?"

"Yup, she was chosen by the grim reaper, and one of her special characteristics is her permanent Spiritual eye. You've seen that before right?"

"I've seen it before." So the girl's spiritual eye was permanent, but it's really creepy. "But what the heck's a grim reaper? He sounds scary."

"Everything I know are actually rumours. The others are all secret. But there are two points I'm certain of. Firstly, the ghost are all very obedient towards her. Secondly, the school is very cautious towards her and her powers. The library was built just for her.

That's right, Zhao Yuehan seemed to have said it before. She lived in the library. Although it's nothing scary, Ouyang Tao felt that it wasn't normal: "Oh? Why make the library for her?"

"Because such a thing like the power of the nether realm, to the living, is a taboo. But the grim reaper's like an ambassador from the nether realm that we can't offend. The only choice was to....."

"Lock her up?"

“Don’t say it so crudely, let’s just say that it’s good service and protection. There’s someone in the library that takes care of her grand, personal facilities and there’s also someone in charge of her meals. She’s as comfortable as a princess.”

But no matter what, anyone could understand that no matter how comfortable the life in the library was, Zhao Yuehan had lost something important — her freedom.

Although Ouyang Tao seemed silly at times, he was quick about some stuff, especially things concerning Mechanical Engineering and its structures: “Actually the library is a seal between the worlds and she is being imprisoned there right?”

“This brat.....” Monica poked Ouyang Tao on the forehead “why ask when you already know.”

Using Mechanical Engineering structures and stabilising connections between worlds was also part of Ouyang Tao’s abilities. It’s just that he didn’t usually get the chance to use it. No wonder he felt that the library was weird from the start.

“But.....”

Ouyang Tao still had stuff he wanted to ask but Monica cut him off: “Concerning the library, I didn’t say anything and you didn’t ask anything. You thought of everything by yourself. Understand?”

“Oh.....” Seems like this topic is taboo as well, I can’t find out anymore. At that point, the cutlery had already been stored away, but Ouyang Tao still had a question: “Oh yeah, senior. My sister’s situation today, didn’t you find it weird?”

“How so?”

“She’s from Elements, why would she discuss elemental magic with someone from Mechanical Engineering?”

“Still worried about your sister. This brother.....” Monica continued to answer

him while smoking “It’s very normal. Most Mechanical Engineering Magicians know at least one other common form of magic. Furthermore, if it’s that guy, it’s not weird.”

Putting it like that, could she.....

“Senior, you know the guy being bullied?”

“Yup, number seven of the Archduke Ryan family.”

“Ah? A son from the Archduke Ryan family!?” Ouyang Tao found it unbelievable.

Archduke Ryan, everyone knew that name. He was the ruler of the country. Being a member of the Archduke family and yet was being bullied in school..... Isn’t that too cowardly.

“There’s no choice, by nature he was not a Mechanical Engineering Magician. He’s extremely gifted in the Elements department, but due to the pride of the Archduke family and other complicated things, they forced him to study Mechanical Engineering, and the result is like that.”

But he is still a son of the Archduke’s family, it shouldn’t be that bad right?”

“Look at him, do you think he can inherit his father’s seat? So everyone looks down on him. Being bullied is a common thing.”

Hearing this, Ouyang Tao suddenly felt his treatment was not the worst in Mechanical Engineering department.

Furthermore, being forced to do something one is not good at, and not willing to do is a very painful thing.

Ouyang Tao still felt uncomfortable: “But.....”

“Don’t worry, someone like him won’t be able to get your sister.”

This, finally made Ouyang Tao relieved.

“Ok, it’s almost 1, hurry up and go rest, I also.....” After smoking, Monica ended the conversation and stretched lazily, preparing to go to bed. Just then, the armband on her uniform sounded: “No way?!”

After a few seconds, Chen Feng came downstairs fully dressed.

Obviously, there was an emergency: “Seniors, what happened?”

“Nothing of your concern. Be obedient and go to sleep. Now is time for adults. Let’s go Chen Feng.” Monica immediately took off her pyjamas and wore her uniform (Big sis, even though I know you’re very open-minded, you still shouldn’t change in front of me). She then left with Chen Feng.

Ouyang Tao understood that it was best not to question things that didn’t concern him. Hence, he went to his room to rest.

However, him not looking for trouble didn’t mean that trouble won’t look for him.

Even though he slept very late, he woke up at the same time the next morning.

Monica and Chen Feng still had not returned yet. This probably meant that something serious has happened. Ouyang Tao remembered Monica’s reminder and did not think too much. Instead, he went to prepare breakfast for his sister.

“Ah Xue, faster, you’re gonna be late.”

“I know.”

Breakfast was toast, scrambled eggs, bacon, and milk with an apple by the side. It was simple and nutritious. However, the siblings didn’t have time to enjoy

their meal.....

Ding Dong~ The doorbell rang. Ouyang Tao went to open the door, only to see a group of fully armed guards and two members from the disciplinary team standing outside the door looking very serious.

“Is anything the matter?”

An officer, with a Major rank, asked: “May I inquire if you’re the first year student from Mechanical Engineering department, Ouyang Tao?”

The other party sounded polite, but still spoke in a serious tone. “Yes..... That’s me.”

Then, the other party did not reply immediately but instead, looked over Tao’s shoulder and into the room: “This is?”

“That’s my sister Ouyang Xue, Elements department.” He had a clear conscience but looking at the Major’s posture, he felt that he didn’t come with good intentions. “It was too late yesterday, so I let her sleep over. Did I break any rules?”

“No, you misunderstood. There was an assault case yesterday and we just need your help in the investigation. Just follow us back to the security station. Don’t worry, we just need your statement. It wouldn’t affect your lessons too much.

“Okay.....”

Looks like something big did happened after all....

Volume 1 Chapter 20 – The Jittery Academy

Something happened. Something big definitely happened. Anyone could tell.

Under the “escort” of a team of armed guards and two members of the disciplinary team, Ouyang Tao and his sister entered the light armoured vehicle and were brought to the security station in school.

Even though they were sitting in the car, it was not difficult to tell that the atmosphere in the school was extremely tense. There were armed guards and disciplinary team members patrolling all around the school.

All the guards were dressed differently. Instead of the light armour they normally wore, they were wearing a reinforced mechanical exoskeleton and armor. They held a black anti-magic explosion-proof shield in one hand and a general purpose machine gun in the other. Fifteen guards formed one team together.

The two disciplinary members were in charge of the teams. One member stood in front to lead the team while the other stood behind to hold the line, and used his sharp eyesight to scan around to maintain a strong defence. They acted as if strong enemy was about to approach.

Down the path, they saw students from the special departments and their protection was even more unbelievable. Every student from a special department had four guards dressed in blue — — they were the guards of the Principality of Ryan.

This meant that they were the elite guards that protected Archduke Ryan’s

Residence. Many of them were alumni of Augustus Academy, and hence, knew the place well. They were all strong figures who could battle a hundred by themselves. However, they were now the personal guards of students. This showed the severity of the matter.

But, just what could cause matters to be so serious?

When they arrived at the security station, Ouyang Tao and his sister were taken to two separate rooms to record their statements.

“..... Which means to say that you separated with them around 11:45 pm last night. Am I right?”

“Yes. After that, me, my sister and my two seniors, the disciplinary team’s Monica and Chen Feng, went back to the dormitory together.”

“Then, during the incident, the few of you were always together right?”

“That’s right, we were always together.”

“Okay, thank you for your cooperation. Your personal guards are just outside. For the remainder of the time, they will ensure your safety.”

“Oh, I understand .”

The questioning and statement took merely fifteen minutes before ending. Ouyang Tao also found out more about what had happened — Three of the Mechanical Engineering students who clashed with them last night were assaulted and badly injured.

Since it was like that, suspecting the siblings was understandable. But due to fire type magic being used, and Ouyang Tao belonged to Mechanical Engineering department, his suspicions were quickly cleared off and he was released.

Ouyang Xue being from Elements department was not so lucky. Despite her

being innocence, the questioning lasted for an hour before it stopped. Ouyang Tao waited outside for his sister.

“Broooo!” Coming out of the interrogation room, Ouyang Xue immediately jumped into the arms of her brother, and hugged him tightly. “I’m so scared…… I obviously didn’t do anything……”

The person in charge of her questioning politely apologised to Ouyang Tao: “I’m sorry that we scared your sister, but it was just routine questions. We hope you understand that we are just doing our jobs.”

“Yeah, I understand.” Ouyang Tao nodded and consoled his sister. “Be obedient, don’t be scared, don’t be scared…… Ah Xue didn’t do anything so she does not need to be afraid.”

Contrary to his sister’s strong front, she was actually rather weak inside. Furthermore, ever since she was young, she had always been an obedient child, and had never experienced this type of situation before. So being frightened was inevitable.

After she calmed down, several guards sent Ouyang Xue to her lessons. Ouyang Tao then went to the library, and everything came to an end……

It was probably too early to say that since Ouyang Tao’s daily life was affected. Especially since he was a student from a special department. He now had four personal guards following him around.

No way, don’t tell me that these guys are following me to the library? Even if a few more people would reduce the creepy atmosphere, having so many people is rather absurd.

Even though something bad, like students being assaulted by a magic user happened, there’s no need for the school to be this jittery right?

Of the four guards, one stood on his left and one on his right. The remaining two stood behind him. Ouyang Tao was not used to it: “Umm…… Big brothers,

do you all have to follow so closely?”

“It’s our mission to ensure your safety until the culprit is found. Please cooperate.” The reply of the guards was within his expectations.

“Okay then. But I’m going to the library and might read for very long. Since you guys can’t enter, are you going to just wait aimlessly outside?”

“Yes, this is our duty.”

There was no choice as it looked like the four of them were determined to follow him.

Arriving at the library, the four personal guards stopped at the entrance and stood at attention. They split two on each side and protected the entrance.

Zhao Yuehan, who was concentrating on reading lifted her head and like yesterday, remained expressionless as she asked in a gentle voice: “Is anything the matter?”

“That..... I’m sorry. I hope you don’t mind those few people there.”

Zhao Yuehan glanced at the guards at the entrance and turned back to Ouyang Tao: “No matter, I already know the whole story.”

She sure is an understandable senior. No that’s not right. Based on her age, she shouldn’t be any older than my sister.

Not only that, she wasn’t allowed to leave the library, so how did she find out what happened outside? She couldn’t have used her Spirits to gather information..... Ouyang Tao felt that he shouldn’t think too much about it.

“I’d like to borrow a few books.....:” After that, Ouyang Tao gave her the names of a few books, just like yesterday.

Then, Zhao Yuehan once again closed and opened her eyes to then say: “Section D of the fifth and sixth floor. The will-o’-wisp will guide you there.”

“Ahh, thanks.” Today however, Ouyang Tao remembered to thank her.

With or without his word of thanks, Zhao Yuehan did not seem to mind at all. She just continued reading the book in her hands.

Today, Ouyang Tao found something that interested him. It was a weapon — named Magic Powered Electrical Rifle.

This weapon was capable of using magic stones as fuel to fire off an electric attack. It could be modified according to different needs and was able to even fire off a strong enough current that could burn through armour. Furthermore, it could fire off electronic pulses to destroy the operation of an electronic system. It was a great weapon.

At this point, Ouyang Tao still didn’t feel like an actual Mechanical Engineering Magician. All his research and effort was not like the others who prepared for their next battle. He only had one motive — in his next battle against Tia, he wanted to beat her.

It was not just sufficient to be well-read, one must also have experience to attain wisdom. This was especially true in the Mechanical Engineering department, which mainly focused on actual battle skills. It further emphasised on logic and actual manufacturing. Ouyang Tao knew it was useless to be just well read. As a result, he chose this electrical weapon for starters.

At noon, Ouyang Tao had finished reading three of the books he had borrowed. He wanted to eat lunch and then go obtain some materials before going back to his laboratory to experiment with the electric rifle’s practicality in the afternoon.

“Just leave it there.....” Like last time, the three books Ouyang Tao finished reading floated back to their original position. However, what was weird was that the three books he did not read remained on the writing table.

“Senior, there’s three books left.”

“You haven’t read them.....” Zhao Yuehan said. How did she know? But what was more surprising was that she even asked him: “Continuing in the afternoon?”

“Ahhh?” Being asked like this stunned Ouyang Tao for a moment. She made Ouyang Tao feel embarrassed for not coming back in the afternoon. However, his reply was still negative: “That..... I might be doing an experiment in the afternoon, tomorrow I guess.”

“Oh.” Zhao Yuehan’s expression did not change one bit as she lowered her head and continued to read her book. However, Ouyang Tao felt that she sounded a bit disappointed.

“Sorry, goodbye.” Strange, why did I apologise? It made the atmosphere weird.....

As Ouyang Tao was about to step out of the hall, all of a sudden, a reminder came from behind him: “Be careful.”

“What?” He turned his head around to look but Zhao Yuehan was still reading her book. Was it just my delusion? Ouyang Tao felt that it wasn’t, and what he had heard earlier was indeed Zhao Yuehan’s voice.

Maybe it’s just a senior looking out for her junior.....

Volume 1 Chapter 21 – The Scholar Gentleman

For the departments of Blacksmithing, Medicine, and Mechanical Engineering, due to the professional nature of the subject, they often required frequent experimentation and consumed resources. As a result, members of these three departments could obtain funds every month to purchase their resources and experiment. If they had not used up all of their funds, it could be rolled over to the next month.

Ouyang Tao applied for twenty kilograms of crudely refined magic stones and two hundred kilograms of general alloys. After his lunch at the canteen, he went to the warehouse to redeem it. Someone would deliver the materials to his dormitory.

However, moving the materials from the outside of the dormitory to inside the laboratory was done by himself, and the boxes of materials took up a lot of effort.

The thing Ouyang Tao was unsatisfied with, was that the four fellows following him did not help him at all. They said their only job was to ensure his safety. Sigh..... What's the point of having you guys around.....

The dormitory was private property and the personal guards only guarded the area. A total of twelve guards split into two shifts to work.

When he finally transported the first batch of materials in, Ouyang Tao realised

that the laboratory doors and the bedrooms doors were open, and there were visible signs of being searched.

Obviously, when the siblings were being questioned at the security station, someone must have searched their dormitories.....

If you want to search just search, it doesn't matter. However, Ouyang Tao was slightly pissed off by the fact that they did it behind his back.

Forget it, time to work. Ouyang Tao quickly moved all the materials in. He then closed the door and started working.

A Mechanical Engineering Magician was able to quickly create a machine, but during their first time, they had to do it slowly, while modifying key parts and testing them. This was done to ensure they would do it as fast as possible next time.

First, he had to refine the elements he need. Creating spare parts was a speciality of Ouyang Tao's, but refining magic stones was a first for him.

Magic stones were a type of unstable mineral. The purer they were, the harder they were to control. However, they would become more and more effective. An experienced Mechanical Engineering Magician could purify magic stones to a purity of more than ninety percent. Although the process was not hard at all, Ouyang Tao did not dare to mess around with it too much and only purified it to about eighty percent — it was only an experiment anyway.

After wearing his protective eyewear, Ouyang Tao took the spare parts and manually polished them one by one — There were more than ten parts that needed to be manually polished, but due to Ouyang Tao's experience and also because he succeeded the very first time, he used a mere four hours to complete the job.

The last part was assembly. This was the easiest process. Ouyang Tao, who had already remembered the blueprints by heart, assembled his first weapon quickly, thereby completing his first creation.

“Hehe, I’m done.” Holding the weapon that weighed over ten kilograms, Ouyang Tao grinned from ear to ear.

All that was left was to test its power.

Without pause, Ouyang Tao inspected, checked, and carried the weapon in a box, to then leave — Of course, the four guards followed him.

Augustus Academy had a dedicated weapon testing ground, and was opened until 10 pm every night. However, Ouyang Tao was too excited and couldn’t wait to see the result. He didn’t care that it was dinnertime and just sprinted towards the testing ground while carrying the box packed with the electric rifle.

At this point, the sun had already started to set. As the phrase goes, “there is no end to the magnificence of sunset”, the sunset’s glow caused the scenery to turn amber. The setting sun made Augustus Academy have a different feel to it. However, Ouyang Tao was not in the mood to slow down and enjoy the scenery.

But there was one thing, or one person, that could.

“Oh! Which means to say, that for an established magician, there is no such thing as elemental weakness.”

“Yes, just like what I showed you just now, wood can actually deal with fire, and so can fire work against water. Water can also beat earth. The key point is the magic power’s foundation and how one applies the skill.”

“But all this is just theory. If not for your demonstration just now, I would have found it hard to believe.”

“Actually, all you need to do is forget the conventional way of thinking, and then you can probably discover something new. *Cough cough.....*”

“Are you okay? You’re coughing again.”

“No problem, it’s just an old ailment.”

Even though it was a hundred metres away, Ouyang Tao could clearly hear his sister’s voice. He immediately stopped and looked around.

His sister was sitting with someone at the corner of the open air training area, and discussing Elements Magic related stuff. Due to his back facing Tao, Tao couldn’t figure out who he was, but was certain it was a guy — Hence, Ouyang Tao made it a point to find out who he was.

“Ah Xue.” He was still more than ten metres away, but Ouyang Tao had already shouted out loud.

“Mn? Ah! It’s my brother!” Ouyang Xue turned to look and then hopped off her seat as she happily waved back at her brother: “You’re just in time. I found out that Edward’s really good in elemental magic.”

The boy also stood up and greeted Ouyang Tao: “Hello, Ouyang sir, I’m Edward. About yesterday’s incident, thanks a lot.”

“Oh, hello.” Ouyang Tao held the other party’s hand in a friendly manner. He didn’t see him clearly last night, but he now saw how the son of the Archduke’s family looked like.

Edward had a medium-sized head but was rather skinny and weak looking. It could even be said that he was frail looking. He wore a pair of thick rimmed glasses. Overall, he gave off a weak looking scholar impression.

Realistically speaking, Edward didn’t possess any arrogance or self confidence that a young master from a high ranking noble family should have. Instead, even the boyishness of being a normal guy was lacking from him. He looked soft and coughed frequently. It was no wonder he was bullied by others.

“Ah Xue, have you eaten yet?”

“Umm, not yet. Why don’t we go eat together.”

Ouyang Tao's original intention was to ask her sister go eat alone so he could talk to Edward alone, but it looked like it wasn't working.

Edward also passionately invited him: "Why don't you let me treat you all to dinner as thanks for yesterday? *Cough cough*....."

"Err....." Ouyang Tao had initially wanted to reject them and say that he had something else to do. However, his sister was now tugging at his elbow.

"C'mon, c'mon. Edward's kindly treating us."

"Well..... Okay then."

Since his sister had already said so, he could only delay the weapon testing until tomorrow.

Even though he was a member of a high ranking noble family, not many knew his identity. This was to ensure Edward's safety in school. Edward also did not tell anyone about it.

They went to Edward's dormitory to have dinner. Similar to Ouyang Tao, he lived in a special zone. However, what was different was that he stayed alone and had several people taking care of him. This was not spoiling him, but instead because he had a chronic illness since birth.

The dinner was not Edward's usual western food. Instead the whole table was filled with chinese cuisine like prawn dumpling, tuna egg roll and barbecued lamb which was Ouyang Xue's favourite. Obviously, this meal was specially prepared.

Although the food was delicious, Edward didn't eat much due to his small appetite.

Overall, Ouyang Tao did not have a bad impression of Edward. At the very least, he was not snobbish. He didn't know what Edward wanted and hence, still acted cautiously around him

However, this did not affect the interaction between them during the meal: “I know, Ouyang sir does not eat western so I asked my chef to prepare chinese cuisine. *Cough cough*..... Not sure if it suits your taste.”

“Yeah, it’s nice~” Ouyang Xue expressed it simply.

“You know that I don’t eat western food?” That was weird, Ouyang Tao clearly remembered that he didn’t see Edward during the welcome dinner.

“Yup, news of the welcome dinner had spread throughout the entire department. Therefore..... *Cough cough*..... I also heard some of it.”

Hearing this, Ouyang Tao felt embarrassed. It looks like he had lost a lot of face back then.

“However, during the guidance match, your battle against Tia was very exciting. It made me have a different opinion of you.”

Hearing Edward’s praise, Ouyang Tao felt that he couldn’t live up to to it. He merely waved it off and humbly replied: “Oh, it was pure luck. My actual abilities are still far from Tia. At the moment, I’m starting from the basics.”

Even though there was a table full of food, it couldn’t stop Ouyang Xue’s mouth. She curiously interrupted them: “Oh yeah, Bro, I was wondering, what did you bring that big box for?”

“Oh, this.” Ouyang Tao patted the weapon box behind him “This is a weapon I just created. I was preparing to test its effects at the testing ground.”

Hearing about the weapon, Edward’s eyes flashed: “Would you mind showing it to me?”

“Sure.” Since this was a standard weapon, Ouyang Tao had nothing much to hide and agreed readily.

But after that, Ouyang Tao quickly noticed that he should not underestimate this scholar's ability.

Volume 1 Chapter 21.5 – Interval

In Augustus Academy's meeting room, all members of the Council, professors, and high ranking teachers gathered together to discuss something important — the assault incident late last night.

The preliminary investigation of the assault case was finished quickly in a few hours. Everyone who attended the meeting looked at the documents in front of them. No one spoke, but they all bore a serious expression — the situation was terrible and could not be described in words.

Then, why was the situation so terrible?

Was it because the assault case brought about a negative impact? No. Augustus Academy was an eyesore to many countries. Having one or two of these cases of such assaults which led to injuries or even deaths was normal because the school itself was a battlefield.

Was it because the victims were of noble backgrounds? No, since Augustus Academy was part of a battlefield and students willingly chose to enter it, then they should be prepared to die in battle.

Could it be that the culprit was hard to catch? Maybe, but that was not the main point.

The main point was what the culprit used when he carried out his assault.

Bang The principal slammed the table and then he clenched his fist, as he

spoke with a bitter expression: “Why..... Why did such a thing appear in the academy.....”

Actually, this was just a rushed preliminary investigation; it shouldn't possess any special content. However, there was something special in this one. After analyzing the remains of the magic that was left behind, the results were shocking — there were traces of pure Original Sin.

The Illusions department specialised in devil's magic; Original Sin and Calamity were the most powerful of illusion magic. Original Sin could stimulate an extreme condition whereby a user's abilities increases by leaps and bounds. Calamity magic could call upon natural disasters, and cause great damage.

However, the Illusion magic humans and normal devils possessed were definitely unable to reach the level of Pure Original Sin. The ones who were capable of using it were the demon kings who no longer was in this world; they should all have been destroyed during the great battle. Their creations, the demon king relics, should also have been lost, and scattered all over the world.

This meant that this assault case was either done by a demon king who had secretly revived, or someone who found a demon king relic — No matter which scenario it was, this was ground breaking news.

Furthermore, the scariest part was that the attribute of this pure Original Sin magic was analyzed to actually be Pride!

Pride was the head of the seven original sins. This was because it signified its haughty contempt towards the divine beings. Furthermore, the one who possessed the power of Pride was the lord of the underworld, Lucifer and his relic, the Crown of Lucifer.

The reason people were afraid of this demon lord was not only because of the strength he possessed, but also because of his shrewdness and scheming nature. If this demon lord really did revive, it would not be an exaggeration to say that the next apocalyptic war was just around the corner.

Luckily, the school handled the situation quickly, and prevented news of the

situation from going out — — However, this was only temporary. If such situations continue to happen, rumours would definitely spread.

As a result, this case needed to be solved quickly and the culprit had to be caught.

However, the biggest difficulty was that since the time humans defeated the deities, thousands of years had already passed. People who knew of demon kings and their relics were very few in number.

Therefore, the principal threw the problem to Lu Yun, who was deep in thought: “Professor Lu, what do you think?”

Augustus Academy’s previous talent Lin Shixiong once researched this topic, and even tried to reconstruct a demon king relic, so his student Lu Yun would naturally have the most speaking rights.

“I think.....” Lu Yun took a deep breath; he knew that his words were going to be very meaningful. After confirming what he wanted to say in his heart, Lu Yun said: “This is most likely not the doing of a demon king but instead someone who possesses a demon king relic.”

Once he said that, the atmosphere became less tense — — if it was someone using a demon king relic and not the revival of a demon king, the situation would be much less severe.

However, as the person in charge, the principal was still very cautious: “How did you arrive to that conclusion?”

Lu Yun also, did not just speak without thinking. He explained his conclusion clearly: “The case this time was just a simple lethal attack. If it was Lucifer himself, he would definitely not employ such rash actions that will reveal his existence. Furthermore, judging from the scene of incident, the control of power is lacking and the assault took too long. Therefore, I conclude that this was someone who found a demon king relic and sought revenge.”

“Hmm, that is certainly a reasonable justification.” The principal nodded, “which means that you suspect the attacker to be one of our students?”

“Yes.” Lu Yun was not just certain, he even added on: “I could even conclude that such an assault incident will happen again, and it will be our best opportunity to catch the culprit.”

Volume 1 Chapter 22 – The Interrupted Dinner

Ouyang Tao had two main objectives for entering Augustus Academy. The first was to learn new techniques. The second was to earn money after learning those techniques.

However, concerning the basic fundamentals of a Mechanical Engineering magician — fighting, Ouyang Tao had not given much thought about it at the moment — although sooner or later, he had to realise that it would be his true destiny.

When he opened his weapon box, two attendants took the weapon out and presented it to Edward. Edward gently touched the weapon from top to bottom and raised his eyebrows: “Oh, this product’s the degree of completion is rather high; the crafted parts are perfect.”

Even when using the same blueprints, different refinement and creation skills would result in a difference in the degree of completion and the quality of the product created. Obviously, Edward held Ouyang Tao’s product in high regard.

Ouyang Tao humbly laughed at the praise: “Heh heh, you’re too kind. This is the first time I’m creating a weapon, and I had just completed it. I have yet to test its capabilities.”

It would seemed that Edward and Ouyang Tao had found a common topic as Edward continued: “Your first one? Speaking of which, for Mechanical Magicians, their first weapon or armour usually has a certain meaning to it. I feel that this weapon that you chose is rather special, just like you yourself.”

“Oh? Me?” Ouyang Tao was very surprised. This was only the second time they have met and Edward was already judging Ouyang Tao’s character? “I’m curious, please go on.”

“Alright. Then.....” As if wondering where he should start, Edward once again, eyed Ouyang Tao from top to bottom: “Let me first talk about you, I hope you don’t mind?”

“I don’t mind.”

“If I’m not wrong, other than Mechanical magic, you are unable to use any other form of magic, right?”

“How did you know?”

“Your attribute. Because most of the attributes in your magic possess metallic properties. So your skills in Mechanical Engineering are able to reach a level normal people cannot, but you are also unable to use other types of magic as a result.

Edward’s evaluation was completely correct and he even unravelled a mystery that Ouyang Tao had always wondered about. However, his attitude towards this was the same as always: “One cannot make an omelette without breaking the eggs. Everyone has their own speciality.”

“Let’s talk about the weapon. *Cough cough*..... In my honest opinion, I hold this magic powered electrical rifle very highly.”

“Yeah, that’s how I feel too. Its actual battle capabilities aren’t bad, and the electricity is also a good countermeasure to machines.”

Ouyang Tao felt that the more they talked, the more friendly they became. He was so engrossed that he had already put down his cutlery. Ouyang Xue who was listening from the side didn’t really understand much, but also grew interested in their conversation.

“In reality however, very few Mechanical Engineering Magicians would choose this weapon.”

“Because of its instability?”

“Yeah, that’s right.”

The electrical rifle had already been designed for a very long time. Therefore, there are a lot of related data. Naturally, the blueprints had already talked about its flaw — its stability.

Electricity was a similar source of power to the original form of magic. Although its power was immense, it was also very unstable due to the highly pure magic stones. Therefore, it was a double edged sword that could easily lose control. It was extremely easy to overload; especially during consecutive attacks.

If that happened, the weapon and the machine it was attached to would be destroyed if the damage was not too big. However, if the damage was big enough, the weapon would devastate the area surrounding it.

Although Ouyang Tao knew all of this, he still chose this weapon: “I feel that the problem can be solved. It’s just whether one makes an effort to do so.”

“Which means, you plan to spend time and effort on a weapon people had already given up on? Maybe after obtaining higher levels of techniques and skills, you will realise that the effort you have spent on the weapon was in vain.”

What Edward said was not unreasonable senseless, but Ouyang Tao’s reply was also clear-cut: “Yes, because I feel that this weapon has a lot of potential. Furthermore, there is a large gap between the skill level of my basics and others. Which is why I wanted to work on it from the start.”

Ouyang Tao had initially treated victory and defeat against Tia with great importance but when he started researching techniques and delving into the field of work he liked the most, he gradually forgot about winning or losing and

just fully focused on his research.

“Speaking of which, I also conducted some research on this field in the past. I have some suggestions but I’m not sure whether you want to hear it.”

“Sure, I was just in need of a few suggestions.”

Edward and Ouyang Tao talked happily, and during the conversation, Ouyang Tao’s impression of the bookworm prince gradually changed into a well read and imaginative scholar.

“I must say, your suggestions are excellent. I actually can’t wait to give them a try.”

“Yes, I also really admire your knowledge seeking attitude. If only I could also..... *Cough cough* *COUGH COUGH*.....” Just when they were happily chatting, Edward suddenly coughed intensively while covering his mouth with his handkerchief.

The servants around them hastily rushed forward and massaged Edward’s back: “Are you ok?”

“I’m alright.” Edward raised up his hand to signal his servants to step down. However, his handkerchief that was used to cover his mouth was covered in blood.

“Edward, are you okay? Why not you go and rest first.....” Ouyang Xue stood up and expressed her concern.

But Edward still rejected the offer: “No..... *Cough cough*..... It’s alright..... Just an old ailment..... *Cough cough*.....”

But no matter what, Edward didn’t seem like he was alright. However, he firmly did not allow anyone close to him.

After a while, his coughing finally stopped, but he looked even weaker than before: “My apologies. It’s rare to find someone who I can get along with..... A little..... Heh heh, a little too excited.”

Coughing so badly just because he got a little excited, Ouyang Tao could not imagine it. How such a person could withstand a battle? Speaking of which, he didn’t see Edward at all during the competition on the first day of school.....

It was likely due to some “backdoor” method that he could continue to stay in Mechanical Engineering.

However, Ouyang Tao understood that in the field of Mechanical Engineering, or even in the field of Magic, Edward was much more knowledgeable than him.

“Truthfully speaking, Ouyang Tao, I envy you a lot. I’m envious that you can completely focus on something you like so much. I’m envious that you are able to choose what you want to do.”

“You can’t do that?”

“I..... Heh heh..... I also want to.....” But I can’t. Edward’s expression revealed his obvious lack of choice. He quickly changed the topic of the conversation: “However, I never expected to meet people like the two of you. People who are so interested in basic theories.”

At this point, Ouyang Xue excitedly said: “Bro, let me tell you, Edward is really smart. I’ve seen many of his famous works before but I never would have expected to meet the real person.”

“Many famous works?” Hearing this, Ouyang Tao seemed to have understood something.

Edward merely smiled and waved it off: “Haha, you’re too kind. Those were just some ideas that I compiled together.”

If we say Ouyang Tao was a technical genius, than Edward would be a

theoretical genius.....

However, at Augustus Academy, a school where actual battle abilities were required, technical aspects were definitely more important than theories. It was difficult for Edward's abilities to receive recognition.

He had several ideas and theories but because of his condition, Edward was unable to put any of his ideas into practical use.

Furthermore, in such a competitive environment like Augustus Academy, personal news were all highly confidential. There was no one who would be willing to discuss about technical aspects with him.

It was not hard to imagine that in eyes of the other students and teachers, Edward was a weak and useless daydreamer.

Maybe, this was where Edward was wronged the most in his heart.

As a result, when Edward met people that he could along with, like the Ouyang siblings, he was extremely happy.

And Ouyang Tao, also felt like he had met his bosom buddy. He had initially wanted to leave with his sister after dinner, but in the end they unknowingly chatted until 9pm.

"My apologies, excuse me while I go to the washroom, *Cough cough*....." Edward stood up and left to the washroom for awhile. The servants wanted to follow but was rejected by him.

"Bro, how do you find Edward?" Ouyang Xue suddenly asked.

"He's not bad and he's pretty formidable. Why did you suddenly ask that?"

"I think....." Ouyang Xue went beside her brother and whispered in his ear: "Edward seems like he's interested in me~"

Once he heard this, Ouyang Tao's expression sank.....

Seriously..... It's only the second day of school! Ouyang Tao felt that, as the older brother, he should say something.....

Right this moment, a BOOM sound echoed from a nearby special zone dormitory. The shockwave of a huge explosion could even be felt here. It instantly shattered the windows.

"Careful!" Ouyang Tao jumped in front of his sister, and used his body to shield her from the glass shards.

And just like that, their dinner had been interrupted.....

Volume 1 Chapter 23 – Continuing With Daily Activities

Less than half a minute after the explosion, the patrolling guards all gathered together. Some of them ran into the scene of the explosion to investigate while others locked down the area and increased the security there. Not long after that, the medical staff arrived.

The four Mechanical Engineering students, who were victims of the attack were hastily carried out in stretchers. They were immediately transported from their dormitories to the hospital for resuscitation.

Due to the large impact of the explosion, several dormitories nearby, including Edward's, felt the shockwave. Related personnel also went to the different affected areas.

"Bro, are you really okay? There's so much blood." Ouyang Xue was very worried after seeing a large area of her brother's uniform stained with red. Luckily, his injuries were not serious; it only looked daunting.

"I'm alright, I..... AHFFF—!" Before finishing the words he spoke while acting cool, the sharp pain of the removal of a shard made Ouyang Tao scream out loud.

Under the protection of his brother, Ouyang Xue was not injured. Although the shards on Ouyang Tao's back and arm needed medical attention, his injuries were not too serious either.

Despite the pain, experienced medical personnel quickly removed the shards and used recovery magic to heal the wound.

Soon, under the aid of two medical personnel, Edward slowly walked down from his room that was in the second level. Although this was simply an accident, Edward still looked extremely apologetic: "My apologies. No one expected such a thing to happen. Please pardon me for not being able to serve the two of you anymore today, *Cough cough*....."

There was no way they could carry on their discussion and dinner after such a thing happened, so Ouyang Tao and his sister bade their farewells and left.

"Bro, are you really alright?"

"Don't worry, the medical personnel are all very powerful. Look, I'm perfectly alright." However, two consecutive days of such incidents made Ouyang Tao worry about his sister's safety: "Ah Xue, let me send you back to your dormitory first."

"No, I'm scared." Ouyang Xue tightly hugged onto her brother's arm: "There are attacks everywhere. It's really scary....."

Ouyang Xue was obviously very scared.

Come to think of it, from the interrogation in the morning to tonight's attack, Ouyang Xue suffered through a continuous number of shocks. Furthermore, she wasn't like Ouyang Tao who had elite guards by his side for protection. It was no wonder a young girl like her would be worried about her own safety.

Since my place is huge, it shouldn't be a problem to let my sister stay for two days. So Ouyang Tao nodded his head: "Okay okay, you can stay at my place tonight."

"Mn, my brother's the best!"

Ouyang Tao felt that this bad situation should pass by very quickly.

Furthermore, he didn't feel that this situation was directly related to him.

The next morning, Ouyang Tao sent his sister to class before continuing on to the library. He had also brought along his electrical weapon and his tools with him with the intention of going to the weapon testing area after he had finished reading in the morning.

Zhao Yuehan was still quietly sitting alone at the reception counter reading her book. The unfinished book that Ouyang Tao was reading yesterday was still left untouched at its original position. Today however, Ouyang Tao wanted to check on some things that had been bothering him, he placed his items in the locker before proceeding to the counter.

"Is anything the matter?" Zhao Yuehan's daily conversation starter was always the same.

"About that..... I wish to check on a specific person's work, can you help me with that?"

Zhao Yuehan replied without hesitation: "Name."

Since it seemed plausible thus Ouyang Tao blurted out the name: "Edward Ryan."

Zhao Yuehan remained silent for a while before saying: "There are a total of sixty five works and a hundred and four books under that author. They are spread across many fields. Do you want all of them or just some specific works?"

Her voice was monotonous and she spoke as if she was the operating system of a machine but Ouyang Tao thought that this should be a question that asked him to choose: "Works from Mechanical Engineering and Elements."

"2nd floor, section F and section D, a total of thirty books. The will 'o' wisp has already pointed out its location."

"Thanks."

From yesterday's conversation with Edward, Ouyang Tao could feel that Edward's education standard was really high. Also, hearing his sister mention about Edward's famous works, made him want to see it in person.

Ouyang Tao casually picked a book about improving current methods to manufacture weapons and machines and browsed it, when something in the book immediately caught his eye.

Edward was definitely not just a daydreamer but was actually an analyst with a large imagination. He was also willing to share all his precious ideas.

But regrettably..... No one really cared about all of these because Edward's suggestions were too irrelevant to the times; they were either too conservative or too advanced. Only highbrow intellectuals could possibly understand them.

"Ahhh, it really is such a waste....." Ouyang Tao was genuinely sad for Edward. He took all of Edward's Elements and Mechanical Engineering books off the shelf and brought it with him to the counter at the first level.

"Sorry, these..... Can I put them here to browse through slowly?"

Zhao Yuehan raised her head and looked at the books then at Ouyang Tao before rigidly nodding: "Sure."

"Sorry for troubling you"

"No problem." Zhao Yuehan continued to read her book.

Unsure whether it was his misconception or not, Ouyang Tao felt that Zhao Yuehan's attitude seemed to have softened a bit as compared to when he first came to the library.

Once noon came, Ouyang Tao just had to place the unfinished book to one side and Zhao Yuehan would make the spirits place the books and the stationery at the writing counter back to their original position.

“I’ll take my leave today Senior, I’ll come again tomorrow.”

“Mn, bye.”

Afterwards, Ouyang Tao headed to the exit. And just like yesterday, when he was about to leave the hall, he heard Zhao Yuehan’s voice: “Be careful.”

Ouyang Tao stopped walking — — after Zhao Yuehan’s reminder yesterday, he and his sister met with an attack yet again at night.

And today, Zhao Yuehan gave a similar reminder again.

Could this be a coincidence?

At the very least, Ouyang Tao didn’t dare to treat it like the passing wind anymore.

Afternoon. Inside Augustus Academy’s fourth light weapon testing ground.

“UWAAAAA — — !” An explosion soon followed and a strong bright light shone straight at Ouyang Tao. Despite wearing protective eyewear and a safety helmet, Ouyang Tao was shocked until he fell to the ground.

This was not an attack but a mere experimental failure.....

The weapon testing ground used the inside of a sealed car in order to prevent an experimental failure from causing harm to the tester. However, the visual and hearing impact still gave Ouyang Tao a shock.

After a while, he finally composed himself and slowly stood up.

It seemed like the seniors’ choices were not without reason. Despite Ouyang Tao’s technique obtaining a high completion level, with the usage of eighty percent purity magic stones, his weapon had already exploded due to overload

in less than half a minute of testing.

“Sigh.....” Ouyang Tao sighed as he looked at the broken pieces inside the experiment area. He would’ve prepared a few backups if he knew this would happen.

Ouyang Tao took his experiment data, carried his weapon, and started his journey back.

Since it was still early, Ouyang Tao wondered whether he should return to his dormitory or go back to the library to read some more.

But he quickly realised that there was something even more important.

“Mn, lower your hand a bit more. The lesser the movement the better.”

“Like this?”

“Lower them some more. Place them just below your chest. That’s right. Then slowly open your hands.”

“Umm, it seems like my magic concentration actually went up compared to before. So body movement would actually affect how the magic is formed.”

“The main purpose of doing this is to conserve your magic. However, many do not care about this.”

From a distance, Edward was guiding Ouyang Xue’s magic while holding her hands.

That’s right, they were holding hands!

Edward stood behind Ouyang Xue and held her thin wrist as he guided the movement of her hands. It felt like Edward was hugging Ouyang Xue from behind.

After hearing the whispers of his sister last night, Ouyang Tao felt a bit uncomfortable.

Should I interrupt them just like yesterday? Ouyang Tao hesitated slightly before deciding not to interrupt them and quickly left.

Volume 1 Chapter 24 – In Regards To Worrying About His Sister

Ouyang Tao needed a quiet place to think it through, so he went to the quietest place in the all of Augustus Academy, the library.

Even though they were not blood related, being the older brother and seeing another guy act intimately with your younger sister would make you feel at a loss.

His sister was seventeen this year, the age in which she would start to blossom. Not only was she pretty, she had great personality too. She had a natural gift for magic and could be considered a girl of talent. Furthermore, in addition to the innocence that only people her age possessed, having guys attracted to her was no mystery.

Thinking about this, his sister's bubbly figure appeared in Ouyang Tao's head. Having such a cute sister made Ouyang Tao also attracted to her..... Ouyang Tao shook his head frantically. No no, we're siblings. We can't..... Wait, it seemed like we don't have any blood relations though.

Which also meant that they could do intimate things together..... Ouyang Tao slapped his head, and tried to prevent his imaginations from running wild.

Yes, it was just a brother's concern. Having such a cute sister, he can't just let any Tom, Dick, or Harry get her. Even in Augustus Academy, hoodlums appeared aplenty. If the person could not get his approval as a brother, he would definitely not allow it!

If Ouyang Tao wanted to give a criteria; firstly, he must look decent; secondly, he has to have great personality and sincerity; thirdly, he must be able to provide for her basic materialistic needs. He couldn't allow Ouyang Xue to starve. And lastly, he must first be accepted by Ouyang Xue.

Then, if judging by these criterias, how would Edward fare.....

In terms of appearance, Edward wasn't too bad. Although he lacked presence, he was a gentleman; in terms of personality, although Ouyang Tao didn't know much, judging from their few interactions together it shouldn't be bad; speaking of materialistic needs, even when ignoring Edward's status, given his abilities, providing a stable income was not problem.

Which meant, it all boiled down to one last thing — Whether his sister was willing or not.

What to do, if sis agreed..... No, why am I so worried. As a brother, shouldn't I feel happy instead?

Don'tknowdon'tknowdon'tknowdon'tknow.....

Ouyang Tao's heart was in a mess and he continuously scratched his head.

Suddenly, the open book in front of him closed with a "bam" before floating to the side of books stacked together.

When Ouyang Tao raised his head, he saw Zhao Yuehan. He didn't know when she had walked to his side but she was looking down at him without a word.

Ouyang Tao's first reaction was to cover his mouth to prevent himself from screaming — loud noises were not allowed in the library.

After a while, Ouyang Tao calmed down slightly. Zhao Yuehan actually spoke first: "Troubled, not suited for reading."

It was still that monotonous voice, still that expressionless face. Her words were short and direct. However, Ouyang Tao felt that there was some sense of reprimand in it. At this moment, she felt like a strict teacher.

“Sorr..... Sorry, because..... I met some problems.” Ouyang Tao apologised quickly. Speaking of which, how did Zhao Yuehan realise that he wasn’t concentrating when he didn’t say anything? Wasn’t she reading the whole time?

But what was even more creepy was what she said after that.

“Because of a person or a problem.”

“Ehhhh?”

Zhao Yuehan gave off the same feeling as a Spirit. She was an ice-cold beauty who could make people tremble in that coldness, but she actually voiced out her concerns about Ouyang Tao? He couldn’t have heard her wrong right?

In the end, Ouyang Tao’s silence brought about an even bigger misunderstanding. Zhao Yuehan actually asked him: “Relationship problem?”

“Ahhh? No no..... Senior you’re mistaken, it’s not what you’re thinking. I don’t even have a lover.” The situation felt weird and Ouyang Tao clarified immediately.

“Is that so.”

“Actually, how should I put it, I can say it’s because of someone or I can say it’s because of something.....”

“.....”

Zhao Yuehan didn’t speak but merely looked silently at Ouyang Tao as if hoping that he would continue talking about what he meant.

When you're troubled, it's good to have someone hear your problem. So Ouyang Tao told her everything from the start. "..... So that's the situation. Simply speaking, I'm just worried about my sister."

Ouyang Tao talked for about half a day but Zhao Yuehan had only replied with two words: "Calm heart."

"Err..... Heh heh..... Right....." Ouyang Tao was stunned for a moment before smiling. Saying everything aloud seemed to calm his heart. Thinking back again, he felt that the situation was nothing major. It was just that he thought too much about it.

If his sister could obtain happiness, as a brother, why should he be worried.

"Continue." Zhao Yuehan turned around and returned to the front desk to continue reading.

Maybe this senior wasn't as cold as she seemed.

After calming down and returning to normal, Ouyang Tao sat down and fully focused on reading.

However, what he did not know was that Zhao Yuehan was not always focused on her book.

After finishing two books, Ouyang Tao felt that the time was about right and he stood up to leave: "Goodbye and thank you senior."

"Goodbye."

After the short goodbyes, just when Ouyang Tao was about to walk out of the hall of the library, he heard Zhao Yuehan's reminder: "Be careful."

This time, Ouyang Tao stopped and turned to look at Zhao Yuehan only to find her looking at him as well — Be careful of what? Ouyang Tao wanted to find

out what she meant.

“This place is safe.” But after saying this unclear phrase, Zhao Yuehan shifted her focus back to her book.

Just what does it mean.....

After leaving the library, Ouyang Tao had planned to return to his dormitory to make some dinner before modifying his electrical rifle based on the suggestions Edward gave. He wanted to make a few prototypes and once again, test them out the following day.

After arriving at the main crossroad, where the left one went towards the normal dormitories and the right one went to the special zone dormitories, a familiar figure walked towards Ouyang Tao: “Ouyang sir, what a coincidence.”

“Oh, it’s Edward.” Ouyang Tao replied in a friendly manner.

Edward had came from the left side which meant that.....

“I had just sent your sister back to her dormitory. Looks like yesterday’s incident was pretty scary for her. My apologies.”

Hey, looks like I was right..... Unknowingly, Ouyang Tao started to become worried and nervous: “No worries, it’s not your fault either.”

“I’m preparing to return to my dormitory, are we going the same way?”

“Yup, I’m also going back.”

As a result, Edward and Ouyang Tao went back to the dormitory together. The eight elite guards protecting them were also sensible as they stepped back a little to allow them to talk privately.

The two of them talked about some course related topics, but Ouyang Tao

couldn't be at ease about his sister's situation at all.

After hesitating for a long time, he finally decided to attack the topic by beating around the bush: "I saw you instructing Ah Xue in magic this afternoon. How was it? Did she throw any tantrums?"

"No, she's a very nice girl. And frankly, I really like her." Ouyang Tao didn't expect Edward to be so blunt about it. Unexpectedly, Edward didn't even try to hide his meaning and just voiced out his thoughts. He also smiled at Ouyang Tao: "However, *Cough cough*..... I feel that I have to obtain your approval as her brother first."

Ouyang Tao did not expect that he would unknowingly be put in such a situation.

Volume 1 Chapter 24.5 – Interval #8

Although Augustus Academy swiftly reacted after the first attack, another attack came unexpectedly on the next day. It was yet again, an assault incident. Furthermore, the victims were Mechanical Engineering students yet again. This made the higher-ups in the school panic.

A Mechanical Engineering magician was someone equivalent to a ten thousand man army. They were the most precious attack force of the Principality of Ryan. Also, during the two incidents, a total of seven people were lost to the attacks. This was even worse than during war times, which was appalling.

If the actual culprit could not be found out in time, the consequences would be unthinkable.

However, the investigation of the school's security team and the elite guards did not lead to anything. Even the Ouyang siblings, who were initially the prime suspects, were eliminated after the happenings of the second incident, making the case even more of a mystery.

Logically speaking, at this point, there would definitely be professors or high ranking teachers who would want to step out to investigate this matter — This was a good opportunity to earn merit and obtain a chance at promotion.

This time, the damage caused by the culprit and the effects of it were very severe, there would also be huge rewards provided by the Academy Council — Whoever could solve the case would obtain the right to be a council member.

Despite all the incentives, no one dared to accept the case. This was because

the clues left behind by the culprit were too few. Furthermore, it concerned the unfamiliar power of Original Sin and the Demon King Relics. Furthermore, time was quickly running out, and the odds of solving the case was close to zero.

However, one person was willing to do accept the uphill task — — That person was Lu Yun.

However, once he took over the case, he did not conduct any investigation or inquiry. Instead, he secretly looked for two members of the Disciplinary Team.

“Professor Lu, I hear that you’re fully in charge of the assault case now. What, do you have a task you want us to do?” Monica asked. She and Chen Feng had been halfway doing their patrol duties when they were suddenly called to meet Lu Yun.

“Yes. Frankly speaking, I already have a rough idea about the identity of the culprit.” That’s right, that was the only reason Lu Yun dared to accept this case. However, he couldn’t take any action yet. “What I’m lacking now is, evidence.”

Monica felt that Lu Yun words were quite strange: “It doesn’t matter who it is. First get him over to do a routine investigation since that’s harmless.”

Chen Feng who was listening from a side also nodded.

“No, I cannot act rashly and startle him. Because if he doesn’t strike at another victim, even I would be unable to crack the case within the limited time period.” Lu Yun said, before suddenly changing topics, “Oh yeah, how’s my student recently?”

“Eh? Why suddenly ask this?” Monica tilted her head in uncertainty: “Professor Lu, you can’t be suspecting the siblings right? Despite not knowing them for long, Chen Feng and I are willing to guarantee that it’s not them.”

Chen Feng also nodded his head in agreement.

“No, the two of you have misunderstood me. I’m only worried about the

siblings' safety.”

“Professor Lu, hearing the tone of your speech, you seem to have already figured out who the culprit is.”

“Erm, rather than saying that I identified the culprit, let’s say instead I can confirm who his next victim will be.” Lu Yun was very sure of the judgement that he made. “The next victim will be the graduate student, Tia.”

Monica blinked her eyes in uncertainty and Chen Feng face was somber. They obviously wanted to know how Lu Yun came upon this judgement and why he looked for them.

“The reason is simple, because you two are the strongest members of the Magic Swordsmanship and the Feral Beast department respectively. Based on your current strength, even if you two are unable to defeat the culprit, you two can buy enough time until the surroundings support army arrive.”

“I understand, using Tia as bait to set a trap, is that right?” Monica exposed a slightly sardonic grin, “She just recently graduated from you Professor Lu, yet you’re actually willing to do this.”

Lu Yun kept quiet for a moment, as his face revealed his helplessness and unwillingness. As a teacher, who would be willing to sacrifice their own student: “That’s why I looked for the two of you…… I’m entrusting this to you guys……”

They must protect Tia — Although Lu Yun didn’t say such a thing out loud, Monica and Chen Feng both understood.

“Understood, leave it to us.”

Volume 1 Chapter 25 – An Older Brother's Entanglement

The original flare shot to test the wind's direction was immediately countered by a cannon — — This was Ouyang Tao's current situation.

So direct!

After hesitating for a second, Ouyang Tao felt that it was appropriate to continue on this topic and tried to casually put it off by acting silly: "Hehe, obtain my permission for what..... Ah Xue isn't a kid anymore, what kind of friends she make is her own business."

However, Edward refused to let go of it. He seemed as though he wanted an answer to his question: "No, I believe that you sir, did not completely comprehend my question.

Ouyang Tao continued to act as if he didn't understand anything, and ambiguously replied: "No? Ah Xue is a likeable person. In the school where she doesn't know anyone, to able to make a friend like you is a good thing."

"Aish....." Edward smiled bitterly and sighed: "So you really did not understand my meaning."

Seriously! He clearly looked like a weakling, but Edward's words somehow had an indescribable gusty toughness to them, as if he needed a result right now.

Ouyang Tao helplessly replied: "Then..... Then what do you mean?"

Without any decoration or euphemism, Edward straightforwardly said: “Frankly speaking, I’ve fell for your sister at first sight.”

“Uhhh.....” Ouyang Tao was stunned for a moment, and was unable to speak.

Looks like it wasn’t just his sister’s imagination, nor was it his unfounded worries. It was the current situation he faced.

Looking at Ouyang Tao’s expression, Edward revealed a bit of regret: “My apologies, should I have been more indirect?”

You shouldn’t have even asked in the first place! Ouyang Tao wanted to shout out loud. But he eventually decided not to. That was because he had no reason to object, and furthermore, obstruct their relationship.....

His sister was no longer a little kid. As a girl, she would eventually meet someone she would fall in love with and get into a relationship..... However, this all came too fast, and was a bit too sudden.

However, Ouyang Tao felt embarrassed to even think about rejecting him because judging solely by Edward’s attitude, he was remarkable. Obviously, he had not expressed his feelings to Ouyang Xue. Instead, he wanted to obtain the brother’s permission first. It was clear that Edward’s attitude was very serious and full of sincerity.

The key point was that Ouyang Tao had a pleasant impression of Edward. If he was his future brother-in-law, it seems as if there was nothing bad about it.....

Even though Ouyang Tao’s heart had an innumerable amount of unwillingness....

“Concerning this matter.....” After composing his thoughts for a while, Ouyang Tao breathed in deeply, before saying: “Since you’ve already said it, then Edward, you consider me half of Ah Xue’s parent and is speaking to me in that capacity right?”

“Of course. That’s why I said that I needed to obtain your permission first.”

“Alright, since you already put it this way, I shan’t hide anything anymore.” Edward’s attitude was so serious that Ouyang Tao felt that there was no reason to hide anything: “Edward, I would like to know, your love at first sight, is it a normal couple playful kind of thing or are you hoping to be with her until the end.”

“Ugh, just like I thought, you are indeed a rather strict person.” Hearing what Ouyang Tao said, Edward smiled. “If I say it’s just a playful thing would you reject me?”

Although he was very concerned over his sister, Ouyang Tao was not a old fashioned person. Regarding love affairs, he was more open-minded: “Maybe not, since in love, the future is uncertain and it cannot be decided overnight. Having a few relationships in your youth might not be a bad thing. However, I expect the truth.”

“.....” This time, it was Edward who was stunned. After a while, he laughed. “Haha..... Your reply is really shocking sir, *Cough cough*.....”

“Why, you thought I will say something like ‘no unless you’re serious with Ah Xue’?”

“A little.”

Despite the unwillingness in his heart, Ouyang Tao chose to face the truth, he said: “This kind of thing is only said by parents. I’m only her brother. Furthermore, she’s not a kid anymore. I..... I can’t always keep an eye on her right?”

“I understand.” Now, Edward fully understood the stand of this brother: “Let me change my question, what’s your bottom line?”

“As long as Ah Xue is willing and you don’t lie to her or hurt her, I have no

objections.”

“I understood.” Edward nodded, “Thank you very much.”

“But if you dare bully Ah Xue, I won’t let you off.” As Ouyang Tao said this, he lightly punched Edward’s body.”

“Okay, if there ever is such a day, please do not let me off.”

“I can rest assured after hearing that.”

Although his heart was at ease, he was not able to completely let it go. Despite his smiles, Ouyang Tao did not feel happy.

After that, Edward invited him: “I’m having dinner with your sister tonight, would you like to come along?”

Since he had already said so much, Ouyang Tao didn’t want to be a light bulb and rejected him straightforwardly: “It’s fine, I have things to do tonight. The suggestions you gave me before, I want to try them out.”

(TL: lightbulb is slang for unwanted third wheel)

Within these two days, the two seniors Monica and Chen Feng had not returned to the dormitory. It was not surprising as after the assault incidents against Mechanical Engineering students these two days, members of the Disciplinary Team patrolled all day, which was very tough on them.

Ouyang Tao casually whipped up a meal for dinner before going to his laboratory for his work.

Generally speaking, an electrical weapon’s biggest advantage and disadvantage was the same thing. Its massive power. Therefore, Edward gave Ouyang Tao three food for thoughts.

The first one was the simplest and most direct: Reduce the purity of the magic stones to reduce its power, to thus make the weapon a support type instead of a main attacking one.

The second one was practical and probable: Use a magazine to load the magic stones. It would keep the power, but change it from a continuous fire to a single shot.

The third one was the most difficult to put into practical use, but the one that had to most imagination: Edward thought that one could change the basic structure of the electrical weapon, thereby allowing it to increase its output and not overload.

So, which one was Ouyang Tao going choose?

It was simple. To Ouyang Tao, there was no need to choose. He felt that all three ideas were not bad and every one of them was useful. So therefore, he had to try all three of them.

As Ouyang Tao delved into his work, he soon started to multitask. His right hand controlled the drawing tool, and swiftly preparing one draft after another. His left hand that was fitted with the metal glove used magic to control the operation of the production line.

As Ouyang Tao became busier, the actions in his hands became slower.

He thought that his sister should be having dinner with Edward now, and judging from Edward's abilities, he very likely had already successfully confessed already.

Then, how would his sister reply? Ouyang Tao started to become nervous.

Furthermore, although Edward had not clearly said it, his attitude already proved it — He was serious.

Perhaps going straight for a wedding proposal was not improbable at all.....

But now, what was the use of thinking of all this? He had already given his approval to Edward.....

Although he had previously agreed to this, Ouyang Tao was now regretting.....

Forget it, better get back to work.....

The actual situation was not very different from what Ouyang Tao thought.

However, the result was a bit different....

Volume 1 Chapter 26 – Why Did I Get Shot?

Just like Edward's assessment, due to Ouyang Tao's magic possessing high metallic properties, coupled with his high level techniques, his machine completion rate was very high.

Not just so, Ouyang Tao's imagination and ability to create was not below Edward. Since he was already familiar with creating the Electrical Rifle, many parts could be made quickly. Only the parts that needed modification took up more time to work on.

Furthermore, Ouyang Tao could control his production line with magic, which increased the work efficiency by several folds.

Using only three hours, Ouyang Tao completed the three different test prototypes. Afterwards, he used the remaining materials to replicate another five copies of each. He then sorted them into three different weapon boxes, and thus successfully completed his work for the day.

All that was left was to bring the weapon to the testing ground tomorrow to test them out.

At this point, Ouyang Tao suddenly felt a strange feeling; a feeling of suffocation. A strong pressuring heat suddenly approached.

It came from the direction of the locked window in the laboratory.

BOOOOOM — — ! Without waiting for Ouyang Tao's reaction, a strong explosion shattered the window. The impact sent him flying, knocking him onto

the main door behind him.

Although he knocked hard against the door, Ouyang Tao did not suffer from any serious injuries and still remained conscious. Something seemed to have helped him cushion the impact against the door.

Soon, a masked man in an exaggerating red ancient robe, with a cape and a black ceremonial hat appeared. He gave off a fiery hot aura as he walked out of the smoke from the explosion, stopping five to six metres before Ouyang Tao.

Who the heck's this guy? Ouyang Tao immediately found the answer to this question — He's the culprit of the past two assault incidents!

"Oi, what do you want!" Ouyang Tao shouted at him.

"Judgement!" The masked man replied, and slowly raised his right hand, a fireball — No, it was a scarlet red energy ball made from the fire element, and aimed directly at Ouyang Tao.

But, why would Ouyang Tao remain still; with a weapon by his side, he immediately sprang into action. He used his magic to directly control a weapon inside one of his weapon box, and positioned it in front of him in mid-air. Both of them seemed to fire of simultaneously. The scarlet light and fives streaks of blue lightning collided into each other, causing a bright light and yet another explosion.

Smoke instantaneously filled the room. Sand and stone flew around as all kinds of shards shot everywhere, turning the laboratory into a horrendous sight. Ouyang Tao could only try and shrink himself while blocking his face with his hands and turning his head to one side.

"Nobody move!"

"Is there anyone here!"

The patrolling guards and the elite guards smashed open the laboratory door,

rushing into the room. Although they were already very fast, there was already no one in sight.

“You’re stepping on me..... Bastard!” Correction, there was someone there, just that he was crushed under the door.

The rescue team immediately removed the door and the debris covering Ouyang Tao, and handed him over to the medical team that followed behind them.

“I’m alright, nothing’s wrong with me.” Despite what Ouyang Tao said, and although there was really nothing wrong with him, the medical staff still insisted on bringing him to the hospital to receive a checkup and treatment.

Compared to the other seven victims who were burnt severely and still laid in the intensive care unit of the hospital, calling Ouyang Tao lucky was an understatement. He only suffered some superficial injuries — Obviously, his quick reaction and new weapon saved his life.

However, this also meant that Ouyang Tao was the only one that fought the culprit and basically came out nearly unscathed. Therefore, he was naturally a crucial person in solving the case.

In the hospital, even though Ouyang Tao underwent a series of checkups and confirmed that his injuries were just superficial with no other problems, he was not allowed to leave the hospital.

Been forced to lie in the hospital bed, it was inevitable that Ouyang Tao complained: “Since you already said I’m alright, why don’t you let me go.”

“It is I, who’s not letting you go.” The young professor said, appearing in front of Ouyang Tao.

“EH? Professor Lu? How come you’re here?”

“Of course I’m here to visit you. My student met with such an incident. How

could I, as a teacher, not show my concern.” Lu Yun didn’t tell Ouyang Tao that he was now in charge of the investigation. This was to keep it secret and prevent any unnecessary panic. “How’s your injury?”

“Heh heh, it’s just superficial. It’s not much different compared to the fight with Tia.”

“We can’t be careless even if it’s superficial. Rest well at the hospital today and discharge tomorrow. You also have to give the repair team at least one night to repair the apartment.”

“Alright.....”

Since his teacher already said so, Ouyang Tao decided not to say much more.

“Tell me, how did it happen?” Although Lu Yun looked calm, he was more anxious than anyone — Why was the target Ouyang Tao? Was his judgement wrong?

Ouyang Tao then recited the incident once to Lu Yun.

Lu Yun became doubtful. He judged that the first two incidents were retaliatory in nature, hence he predicted that Tia would be the next victim.

However, this incident proved that Lu Yun was wrong. He needed to understand where had he gone wrong.

The regretful thing was, after hearing Ouyang Tao’s story, Lu Yun didn’t find any clues. Because what he had heard from Ouyang Tao, sounded like an adventitious incident.

This time, Lu Yun started to worry.....

“Bro..... Brother!!!” At this time, a girl’s cry interrupted the conversation.

Looking at the source of the shout was Ouyang Xue. Her face was flushed red and she was panting. It seemed like she had ran over.

“Ah Xue?”

“UWAAAAH — — ! Bro!” Seeing her brother safe and sound, she could no longer hold back her tears and agitation. She pounced onto Ouyang Tao and started to cry in his clutches “Uuu..... I’m so glad you’re fine. So glad. Uuu.....”

Ouyang Xue had just been sent back to her dormitory when she heard that such an incident had happened, and that the victim was her brother. Hence, she rushed to the hospital immediately.

“Good Ah Xue. Don’t cry, don’t cry. Look at me. Aren’t I alright?” While consoling her sister, Ouyang Tao apologised to Lu Yun “Professor Lu, my apologies. My sister is a little agitated.”

“No worries, care and concern between siblings is very common.”

The people visiting Ouyang Tao was not only his sister. His seniors from the same dormitory Monica and Chen Feng also came with a fruit basket: “Yo~ You look energetic, looks like you’re alright then?”

“Yup, more or less.”

The visiting Chen Feng also brought along a small bottle which he placed at the head of Ouyang Tao’s bed. He then pat Ouyang Tao on the shoulder showing his concern while Monica explained: “This is a life-saving pill Chen Feng usually use for emergency injuries. Its effects are extremely fast.”

“Thank you seniors.”

Not long after that, another visitor came. It was Edward who came under the protection of his guards.

“Yo, Edward, didn’t expect you would come as well.” Ouyang Tao took the initiative to welcome his new friend.

“Ah, my friend, I really didn’t expect such a thing would happen.....”

“I’m okay. If not I wouldn’t be talking to you in such a relaxed manner.” He arrived at the school for only just a few days, yet so many people were already showing him concern; Ouyang Tao was extremely happy: “Eh? What happened to your hand? Are you injured?”

Ouyang Tao observed that both of Edward’s arms were bandaged, but Edward merely shook his head: “It was all my fault. After hearing that you got assaulted, I panicked and walked too fast. In the end I fell down the stairs. Luckily, there were guards there to bandage for me, *Cough cough*.....”

“You need to be careful.” Although Edward was a theoretical genius, his body was weak and he was vulnerable to illnesses. This was really worrying.

Not just all these familiar people, someone who was unfamiliar also came to visit — It was Tia.

“Your get well soon gift.” Tia placed a gift basket at the head of Ouyang Tao’s bed “Recover quickly, I hope you won’t use your injury as an excuse when you lose the next time.”

After speaking, Tia turned and left.

This happened all too fast and Ouyang Tao did not seem to comprehend what had happened.

His sister had already started to ask: “Bro, who’s that? What’s your relationship with her? Why’s she visiting you?”

(TL note: She has serious brocon issues)

“Ahh? That..... I don’t know her too well.....” Ouyang Tao was helpless. Other than the guidance match with Tia, they had barely interacted. Ouyang Tao had not expected her to visit as well.

Being attacked was clearly a bad thing, but Ouyang Tao felt rather happy deep down.....

Volume 1 Chapter 27.5 – Interval #9

Going back a few hours ago, in the evening, Ouyang Xue had accepted Edward's invitation to dine with him and they arrived at a restaurant in school.

Despite the repair team taking merely two hours to fix Edward's dormitory, Ouyang Xue was still startled by the incident. Therefore, it was better to eat at a private room of the restaurant.

Within Augustus Academy, there were free of charge meal halls and also restaurants that charged. Due to the fact that many of the students were members of nobility or from rich families, the setting of the restaurant was rather important. At the restaurant, the food was delicious and the interior of the private rooms could be decorated based on one's preference.

"Wah, it's so pretty! This is the first time I've been to such a place. Edward has specifically chosen a private room that had the setting of nature. Entering it, one felt like they were staying among mountains. The tranquility made it very suitable for small talk and it did not lack nature's vitality.

Seeing how happy Ouyang Xue was, Edward was very satisfied: "As long as you like it."

"Bro's not coming?" This was Ouyang Xue's first sentence after sitting down.

"Your brother has some matters to attend to today. He won't be coming."

"Ohh, Bro's not coming....." Ouyang Xue looked disappointed after hearing that.

During dinner, Edward did not choose any ordinary meal but instead chose a barbeque buffet. It matched to the environment pretty well and it felt like an outdoor barbeque session.

“..... That’s why, in the past, it was always me who’s protecting Bro in school.”

“Heh heh, so that’s the case.”

Since Ouyang Tao wasn’t around. Ouyang Xue started their conversation. She narrated to Edward stories of their past.

“However, at that point in time, I really never expected my brother to be able to get in Augustus Academy. Furthermore, it was Mechanical Engineering which was better than me..... Ugh..... I’m slightly jealous.”

“I feel that it just as your brother said, everyone has their own specialities. In his innate attributes, ‘Metal’ took up almost all of it. You however, is talented and your innate potential are all spread evenly amongst all the Elements.”

“Eh? Edward, how can you tell?” This was a question that Ouyang Xue had always wanted to ask since yesterday.

Logically speaking, everyone’s magical attributes was fixed and was every magician’s secret. There were even times that the magician himself does not know it (For example, Ouyang Tao). If one does not undergo secret tests, it was near impossible to find out. However, Edward could tell just by looking.

“This, let’s just say that it’s one of the things I’m good at.” Edward replied while smiling: “Frankly speaking, compared to fighting, my speciality lies in observations and research. Furthermore, based on magical attributes, I’m more suited for the Elements or Illusions department.”

“Eh? Since you know that, why are you still studying Mechanical Engineering?”

“This..... Hehe..... “ Edward forced a smile. This was probably the biggest

frustration for him, “It’s not wrong to say that I don’t have a choice in this matter.”

“Why? My Bro always say, if one does not do what he likes or is good at, then what’s the point?” Ouyang Xue asked in an astonished manner.

“That’s right..... There isn’t much meaning.....” Doing something he did not like and not even able to have a choice of his own; Edward was always very pained about it. This pain was something only Edward himself knew, “Therefore, on this point, you siblings are very similar. I really envy you two.”

It did not matter whether it was Ouyang Tao or Ouyang Xue; both of them possessed the same positive and optimistic attitude. They led their lives making their own choices.

And now, Edward also wanted to make a choice based on what he wanted.....

“Aiya, it’s the first time someone said we’re similar.” Without waiting for Edward to continue, Ouyang Xue popped such a phrase out from nowhere.

“Oh?’

“Actually, Brother and I aren’t blood related.”

“Which means to say..... You two aren’t blood related?”

“Yup, that is why most people say that we aren’t like siblings at all. There are times when people mistake us for couples, hehe.”

“So that’s it.....”

Ouyang Xue just spoke causally. And though the one speaking had meant no harm, the one that listened was still hurt.

Although he had made his decision, Edward now knew that there was no point

in saying it anymore.

In the young girl's heart, there was already an irreplaceable person.....

Volume 1 Chapter 27 – The Visiting Spirits Girl

“Are you okay?”

“I’m fine, just..... EHHHH!?” Ouyang Tao had only replied casually but he immediately felt that something was wrong. He turned his head around and saw a spiritual figure standing by the side of his bed. He was instantly startled and screamed out loud: “WAHHHHHHHHHHHH — — !”

“What’s wrong!” Soon, the ward door was pushed opened heavily and the guards who were standing guard outside rushed into the room and instantly turned on the lights of the room.

Ouyang Tao then realised that the spiritual figure standing by his bed was actually Zhao Yuehan.

How did she come in without being noticed! ? Didn’t the guards outside notice her? If she’s spotted like this now, it would definitely cause a great misunderstanding.

Ouyang Tao hastily tried to explain the situation: “No..... This is a misunderstanding. It’s not what you guys think..... She’s not the culprit.....”

However, since he was too nervous, Ouyang Tao speech was incoherent, he could not say anything clearly. Despite that, Zhao Yuehan was still very calm.

“Don’t worry, they cannot see and hear me.”

“Mn?” Ouyang Tao blinked in uncertainty, only to see the guards having the same unsure expression as him.

“Are you okay?”

Seeing their reaction..... Could it be that they did not notice Zhao Yuehan’s existence at all?

If that’s the case, it would be better to not blow up the situation. Ouyang Tao went along with the flow and replied: “My..... My apologies. It appears that I just had a bad dream.”

“Ohh..... Rest early then.” The guards shook their heads and closed the door and turned off the lights. “It appears that this kid was shocked quite badly.”

After the guards left, Ouyang Tao heaved a sigh of relief. He had been startled quite badly.

The ability to make herself unseen and unheard, wasn’t that the same as an actual spirit?

To Ouyang Tao, a new question arose. What was Zhao Yuehan here for? Was she here to visit him? Wasn’t she not allowed to leave the library..... No, it didn’t seem like there was such a rule.

“Senior, are you here..... to visit me?”

“Yes.”

So it was true. Ouyang Tao was exceptionally surprised. The people who visited previously had some form of relationship with him but Zhao Yuehan..... Ouyang Tao felt that there wasn’t much of an interaction between them.

However, it was still a good will from her: “Thank you. As you can see, I’m

fine.”

“No.” However, Zhao Yuehan gave a negative answer, and gave him yet another warning: “You’re currently in a lot of danger.”

Even though Zhao Yuehan was still expressionless, and the tone in her voice did not change much, the contents of what she said was enough to cause a chill to surge through Ouyang Tao.

The first time Zhao Yuehan gave Ouyang Tao a warning, that very night, the second assault case happened.

The second time she gave a warning, it would seem as though nothing much happened.

But the third time Zhao Yuehan gave him a warning, and even told him about how safe the library was, Ouyang Tao had been assaulted.

Now, Zhao Yuehan was no longer warning him to be careful. Instead, she was clearly telling him that danger was approaching. How could he not be afraid?

Zhao Yuehan’s premonition had always been right. Hence, Ouyang Tao naturally asked: “Senior, do you know something? Couldn’t you tell me directly?”

However, Zhao Yuehan did not answer his question. She merely held his hand, pulled him outside, and said: “Leave.”

Ouyang Tao did not know why, but he could feel a sense of toughness and time-pressing attitude in her speech.

“Senior, do you mean for me to go avoid danger in the library?”

“Yes.”

“Okay, but could I at least change first.....”

“No time.”

“Eh.....”

In the end, Ouyang Tao was forcefully dragged out the room in his hospital robe. He only had enough time to bring along his metal gloves — — there was a sense of familiarity in this.

“Is it okay to go out like this?” There was no attempt to hide as Zhao Yuehan just dragged Ouyang Tao out of the room openly, and walked right under the noses of the guards.

It can't be? Have I also turned into a ghost?

“Don't worry, they can't see or hear us.”

Ouyang Tao thought that it was lucky that Zhao Yuehan wasn't his enemy. If not, even if he died, no one would find out.

Zhao Yuehan brought Ouyang Tao out of the hospital and they immediately made their way to the library.

Hand in hand with a pretty senior under the moonlit road, such a thing..... Ouyang Tao didn't feel the slightest hint of blush nor the throbbing of youthful heartbeat. Perhaps there wasn't any sense of a romantic type of feeling whatsoever — — He predicted that Zhao Yuehan felt the same way.

Ouyang Tao even started to wonder whether or not this senior felt anything like love.

To correct himself, Ouyang Tao did feel his heartbeat speeding up. However, that was due to nervousness and fear, and also coldness..... Ouyang Tao wasn't sure why, but being around Zhao Yuehan made him feel cold — — It definitely wasn't a normal human's temperature.

Speaking of which, Monica seemed to have said before that Zhao Yuehan wasn't a normal human being. She was a grim reaper or something like that. And this ice cold sensation did indeed feel similar to a corpse.

Also, why did this senior warn him or even help him like that? Ouyang Tao didn't understand. He thought that he would asked her clearly when they reached the library.

About two-thirds the journey through, the academy's warning siren suddenly rang.

Soon, numerous patrol guards ran past them — Although the guards could not see them, they were clearly running in the direction the two had come from — The Hospital.

Which also meant that if it weren't thanks to the fact that Zhao Yuehan appeared, Ouyang Tao would most likely have already met his demise.

"Senior, what exactly....." However, Zhao Yuehan remained expressionless and pulled Ouyang Tao along even more quickly.

"Hurry, it's coming."

"What's coming....." As soon he finished what he said, Ouyang Tao suddenly understood — Just like when he was assaulted, a similar feeling of pressure had befallen him.

At this point, a scarlet red light fell in front of Ouyang Tao and Zhao Yuehan.

Under the light, a person dressed in bright red wearing a masked appeared yet again in front of Ouyang Tao....

Volume 1 Chapter 28 – The Protecting Spirit

The thing that Ouyang Tao feared had finally happened. The attacker has come to sought him out yet again.

This time, he did not have any materials with him, let alone say a weapon. Since he could not use any other forms of magic other than Mechanical Engineering magic, he had no means of retaliation.

Just like the previous time, the attacker raised up both of his hands. A scarlet-red orb instantly formed and aimed towards Ouyang Tao.

Ouyang Tao had no choice and instinctively retreated.

However, Zhao Yuehan kept a calm face and released the hand that held Ouyang Tao. Then, she stared intently at the attacker. She looked as though she had not been intimidated at all.

Ouyang Tao went behind Zhao Yuehan. Although it was embarrassing, he knew that he could only rely on this senior's protection now.

The red light shot forward and just as it was being released, a magical array instantly appeared in front Zhao Yuehan. From it, a sword which was much longer than Zhao Yuehan appeared and acted as a shield, blocking off the fatal red light.

“Go to the library.” Zhao Yuehan said. Obviously, she had the intention of covering Ouyang Tao’s rear.

At this point, Ouyang Tao didn’t care anymore. He turned around and sprinted off towards another path and headed for the library.

How could I be so useless! To let a girl protect me while I run away. However, staying alive was the most important thing and Ouyang Tao sprinted like a mad man.

Seeing that Ouyang Tao escaped, the attacker, who knew Zhao Yuehan was not weak, decided not to engage her in battle. His figure instantly started to turn into red light as he prepared to chase after Ouyang Tao.

“Don’t even think about it.” Zhao Yuehan had seen through the attacker’s motive and turned her wrist, cutting down with the huge sword in her hand. She cut down the red light that was about to pass her, and instantly turned the attacker back into a human figure.

This was Zhao Yuehan’s attacking style. She didn’t even need to hold her sword during battle. All that was required was magic to control this huge sword.

“It’s the undead soul sword.....” The attacker realised that this huge sword was not any ordinary sword. It was the token of Zhao Yuehan’s status as a grim reaper — it was a death god artifact.

Zhao Yuehan remained silent, and only continued blocking the other party. Her hands maintained her posture. Her calm gaze stared at every detail of the attacker as she firmly defended against him.

However, the attacker did not give up just like that. He rose both his hands, and a scarlet orb shot into the sky from his hands. Following that, countless red light arrows continuously shot out from the orb. Overwhelming the whole sky, the arrows aimed towards the escaping Ouyang Tao.

At the same time, the attacker turned into red light once again and began his chase for Ouyang Tao.

Seeing the other attacker's two pronged approach, Zhao Yuehan expression maintained the same calmness. Her reaction was quick as her body and the sword simultaneously rose into mid-air. Both her hands turned and the huge sword spun quickly in mid-air, becoming a sword shield, deflecting off all the arrows.

Below her, the attacker who had become red light, was about to catch up with Ouyang Tao. Seeing this, Zhao Yuehan used her magical array to create two other huge swords, and shot them at the orb which was shooting out light arrows.

After that, Zhao Yuehan's body quickly dropped and stopped right in front of the red light. She opened her arms wide to form an invisible obstacle that blocked off the red light's advancement. Following that, the huge sword in the sky plummeted down like a comet. However, the attacker did not seem to notice this. When he realised that, he retreated immediately; although he managed to avoid a fatal blow, his shoulder was still damaged by the falling undead soul sword.

"Don't even think about it." The same words, but this time, it held more conviction than before.

Seeing that Ouyang Tao had already fled quite far away, and the fact that their fight brought about a huge commotion, the attacker expected patrol guards to arrive quickly. He decided to end the fight as quickly as possible: "Let's see how you manage this!"

This time, he released many orbs into the sky. Each orb turned into a light arrow, and they all shot towards Ouyang Tao from all directions.

Ouyang Tao was oblivious to the fierce battle happening behind him as he only focused only running for his life.

Just a few more streets and he would have arrived at the library to successfully

escape. However, Zhao Yuehan suddenly appeared in front of him, and heavily pushed him to the ground. Ouyang Tao instantly fell to the ground on his back.

Before Ouyang Tao could comprehend the situation, a startling sight appeared in front of him — Red arrows passed through Zhao Yuehan's body from behind before disappearing. Two streams of blood oozed out of her. Then, like a kite without strings, Zhao Yuehan collapsed on top of Ouyang Tao's body.

Due to the fact that the attack was too close, Zhao Yuehan was unable to block it. Hence, she had no choice but to use her body as a shield to protect Ouyang Tao.

Why..... Just why! Why was it that a senior, who wasn't really close to him, was willing to protect him to such extent!

By then, the attacker had already disappeared. The patrolling guards had started to arrive at the scene. However, all of them rushed pass Zhao Yuehan and Ouyang Tao. Nobody seemed to have taken notice of them.

"Senior! Senior, please hold on!" Ouyang Tao shouted for help continuously "Oi! Anyone! Come help!"

However, there was no reply.....

"I can't Dispel....." Zhao Yuehan struggled to speak "They can't see..... Nor..... Hear us....."

"This..... Why is it like that....." Although he did not know the reason, the situation made Ouyang Tao sink into utter despair.

Zhao Yuehan's right rib and left abdomen were dripping blood. To her, every second was precious life that bled away. However, Ouyang Tao could not do anything. Furthermore, injuries caused by magic were not easy to treat.

What can I do!

At this dangerous time, Zhao Yuehan gave him a hint: “Lib..... Library.....”

AHH! That’s right, the library! Monica said it before, the library was a personal abode constructed for her. There might be someone in there that could save her!

“Hang on senior, I’ll bring you to the library!” Without another word, Ouyang Tao immediately carried Zhao Yuehan and sprinted to the library at a speed faster than he used to escape earlier.

Zhao Yuehan used her remaining strength and consciousness to direct Ouyang Tao to open a secret path; they took an elevator and headed to the basement level five of the library.

As the elevator door opened, Ouyang Tao arrived at an underground courtyard. Just like what Monica had said, the library possessed all kinds of grand facilities.

But the problem now was, where were the people? Where was the thing that could save Zhao Yuehan.

Zhao Yuehan gave another hint, using almost all of her remaining strength: “Go straight..... The altar.....”

Without much time to think, Ouyang Tao sprinted straight ahead, arriving at a room at the end of the path.

The room was more than thirty square metres square. It was quite empty other than a gigantic glowing magical array on the floor which had a stone podium in the middle of it. On the stone podium was a white crystal coffin.

“..... My clothes..... Remove them..... Put in.....” Zhao Yuehan could no longer speak in complete sentences.

“Senior, do you mean for me to remove your clothes and put you in the crystal coffin?”

Zhao Yuehan nodded slightly.

Although it was to save her life, Ouyang Tao felt that removing clothes for a girl was an utterly embarrassing thing to do.....

However, there was no time for his imagination to run wild. Ouyang Tao realised that Zhao Yuehan was wearing an intricate dress that was quite complicated to remove.

Seeing that Zhao Yuehan's aura was getting weaker and weaker, to the extent that she lost consciousness, Ouyang Tao did not care anymore about their gender differences. He steeled himself and tore open the collar of her dress. From there, he slipped the dress off her before carrying her into the coffin.

The cover of the coffin closed by itself and the magical array on the floor activated. Life immediately returned to Zhao Yuehan's face and the wounds on the surface had recovered at a frightening speed.

However, just treating the surface of magic induced injuries was insufficient. In-depth treatment that took up a long time needed to be carried out — — Despite that, it was obvious that Zhao Yuehan was already fine.

"Thank you." Zhao Yuehan said from inside the coffin.

"It's me that should thank you." Looks like Zhao Yuehan was indeed fine already.

Since she was fine, Ouyang Tao felt that he should excuse himself. He should not stay and continue staring at her naked body.

"Senior, then, I shall..... Excuse myself." Ouyang Tao turned and was about to leave.

"Don't leave." Zhao Yuehan had asked Ouyang Tao to stay. And her reason was "I'm scared."

Volume 1 Chapter 29 – The Smiling Senior

Scared; that was the common impression most people had of Zhao Yuehan and the library.

Though the lighting in the library was good, due to the lack of people, it seemed too empty and deathly still. It made people who enter feel exceptionally cold. Also, coupled with the paranormal activities that sometimes happened, the library felt even more creepier.

Initially, Ouyang Tao felt the same way.

Now however, Ouyang Tao understood that this was a misconception caused by people's fear.

Monica's "long and scary story" was most likely exaggerated rumours caused by people's fears.

It was the same girl that made people shudder who said the phrase "I'm scared". This was certainly an unbelievable thing.

However, since the girl already said so, how could Ouyang Tao, as a guy, just leave at a time like this.

Ouyang Tao understood that even though Zhao Yuehan had the special identity as a grim reaper, was always expressionless, and didn't speak much, even he himself treated her like a spirit. But it was obvious that the real her was not like that.

Her lack of expression might have been natural and her lack of words could be due to a lack of people to communicate with — — No, few people visited this gigantic library and the luxurious facilities were all automatic. Being in such an environment that lacked life for so long, anyone would become a little weird.

Zhao Yuehan was definitely not a cold spirit. She was just a young magician who, age-wise, was not much older than Ouyang Xue.

Furthermore, she was so beautiful. If she smiled, she would definitely charm the masses.

No matter what, standing beside a naked woman made Ouyang Tao feel really awkward. He attempted to close his eyes since what you do not see is no evil — — despite having already seen everything.

“Why do you close your eyes?” Zhao Yuehan who was inside the coffin seem to not comprehend Ouyang Tao’s situation at all.

“Why..... This.....” Does she even need to ask? Obviously it’s because I’m embarrassed!

“Because I’m ugly?”

“No, of course not. Senior you’re very pretty.”

“Please open your eyes.”

“No..... Not because of that..... Senior, because..... Right now..... You..... Are not wearing anything.....”

“Because my body is ugly?”

“That’s not it either.....”

“Then please open your eyes.”

He simply could not communicate with her.....

Ouyang Tao forced his eyes open and Zhao Yuehan's flawless white skin instantly appeared in front of his eyes. Her body was so slender and she looked so small and delicate. The small swell of her bosom was adorned with two pink buds which made her seem like she was not only a young girl, but also a fragile piece of art that would break at just a touch.

And it was this young girl who was fighting with a stranger not so long ago to protect me. She even took two arrow shots and nearly lost her life.

Since matters were like that, Ouyang Tao wanted to find out the reason: "Senior..... Why....."

"What?"

"Why are you constantly reminding me to be careful and even took to such risks to protect me."

"Because....." Zhao Yuehan remained silent for a while before replying, "I hope you come read with me everyday."

"....."

It was unclear whether it was because of astonishment, surprise, or sadness, but Ouyang Tao did not say a word and stupidly kept his mouth agape.

Just that simple reason? Just for that simple reason, Zhao Yuehan made such a big sacrifice?

"You..... Will you still come everyday?"

If he could not even agree to this, Ouyang Tao felt that he wouldn't have the right to live in this world: "Yes, definitely."

Even though the library was a sturdy magical fortress, Ouyang Tao didn't forget that outside the library, there was still a masked man who did evil things. Even if they were safe, what about the others? Especially his sister who was still outside.....

Now, Ouyang Tao needed to ascertain what this senior knew: "Senior, could you tell me now? How can you predict my dangers?"

"The power of the original sin, Pride, is on your body."

"What?! Why does my body have such a thing?!" Anyone who had attended basic magic theory classes would know that the original sin power was a power of the demon kings. Ouyang Tao was instantly shocked when he heard it.

"Not you." Zhao Yuehan who laid in her crystal coffin shook her head slightly "Someone or something you interacted with."

"Someone who interacted with me....." Ouyang Tao was confused, from the first to the third warning, the people who interacted with Ouyang Tao weren't much. He could count them with one hand.

Could the culprit be among them? Ouyang Tao found it hard to believe.

"Silence, listen to me....." Then Zhao Yuehan simply summarised the characteristics of the power of the original sin of pride and also described her battle with him. Ouyang Tao predicted that this was probably the day she had spoken the most since her birth.

The power of the original sins were a fair power. While it provided a person with the huge strength of "Sin", the user also received a fair amount of "punishment".

Pride was the leader of the seven sins and it represented their contempt for the gods. It gave a huge power to the user but also took away a portion of the user's sense of perception. At the same time, the user's mind and personality

would change greatly. The more one used this power, the more it changed. In the end, the user would be unable to recover and would lose control of the power. Eventually the user would be engulfed by that power.

The reason why the attacker was able to come and go as he wished was because he had fused the power of original sin with himself, allowing him to turn into a swift moving scarlet-red flame. That was how he was able to breakthrough all kinds of tight monitoring. What the person used was also pure fire element.

Zhao Yuehan said that this was the first time she had seen someone use that kind of magic.

Using a pure elemental type of magic as a weapon and turning into the element..... These words were familiar to Ouyang Tao..... He seemed to have read it somewhere before..... Could it be.....

No, Ouyang Tao did not believe such a thing was happening, but what if it was true? He would not be able to hide in the library with a peace of mind.

“Sorry senior, I.....” Ouyang Tao had turned around and wanted to leave but at this point, a gentle strength tugged at his wrist.

Zhao Yuehan’s hand had passed through the coffin and gently tugged at Ouyang Tao. She stared at him without speaking.

Ouyang Tao understood that she was trying to ask him to stay.

That’s right, no matter how urgent this was, he didn’t have to leave immediately and leave the still recovering Zhao Yuehan alone. No matter what, that was unacceptable.

Furthermore, Ouyang Tao did not have any weapon or materials at the moment. If he went rashly, he would just be courting death.

“Okay..... I’ll stay.” Ouyang Tao turned back and Zhao Yuehan also let go of his hand.

It was no problem to stay, but the night was long. He could not just stare at a beautiful naked girl for an entire night. He might lose control.....

Then, Ouyang Tao realised that the writing table that he so often used had moved to the room. The books that he had not yet finished reading were there as well.

Zhao Yuehan turned back to Ouyang Tao and smiled slightly.....

Volume 1 Chapter 30 – Who Said I Was Dead?

Actually, Ouyang Tao did not like to burn the midnight oil. Furthermore, what happened the previous day had taken its toll on Ouyang Tao mentally. Therefore, after reading for a while, he had fallen asleep on the study table.

Waking up groggily the next day, Ouyang Tao realised that the crystal coffin beside him was empty and there was a blanket covering him. Obviously, it was placed there by Zhao Yuehan — The fact that she could move meant that she should be fully recovered already.

Ouyang Tao folded the blanket nicely before stretching his lazy self. As he looked up, he saw Zhao Yuehan already standing in front of his study table.

“Wahhhh — — !” Ouyang Tao jumped in shock and nearly fell. Zhao Yuehan appeared out of nowhere like a spirit.

“Good morning.”

“Ahh..... Morning senior.”

Judging from the colour of Zhao Yuehan’s face, she seemed to have already fully recovered. This made Ouyang Tao finally feel at ease.

Although she still had the expressionless look and spoke monotonously, Ouyang Tao didn’t know whether or not this was his misconception, but he thought that she seemed to have less of her usual ghastly coldness and more of a young girl’s gentleness.

But he felt that this was not a bad thing.

At this point, Zhao Yuehan held a tray in her hand. On it was a big bowl that was still giving off hot steam. It also had the smell of sesame oil.

Ouyang Tao thought, this couldn't be breakfast, could it?

"Breakfast." Zhao Yuehan said, placing the huge bowl on the writing table. "Enjoy."

It really was breakfast! Ouyang Tao looked down at the bowl. It was a savory meat wonton that was fresh, had thin skin, and a lot of meat. Not only that, there was also kamaboko, big prawns, seaweed and other types of seafood in the soup. Just looking at it made a person salivate.

"Wah, delicious!"

After a mouthful, Ouyang Tao found that the wonton was very delicious. After a while, he had finished the whole bowl of soup, and had not left anything behind. At that point, Ouyang Tao realised that Zhao Yuehan had been standing beside him while watching him eat.

"Do you want another bowl?"

"No, I'm already very full. The wonton was very delicious. Thank you senior." Ouyang Tao didn't expect Zhao Yuehan to be so good at cooking, "Senior, you're not eating?"

Zhao Yuehan shook her head gently: "I've already eaten."

After sleeping, Ouyang Tao felt fresh and fully revitalised. Furthermore, since Zhao Yuehan was also fine already, Ouyang Tao felt that it was time he ascertain some facts: "Senior, I....."

"I know." Zhao Yuehan knew what Ouyang Tao wanted to do, and she did not

plan to stop him. She only calmly asked: “But what do you plan to do?”

“I.....” Ouyang Tao hesitated for a moment. That’s right, what did he plan to do next?

“It’s safe here.” Zhao Yuehan didn’t need to spell out what she meant. She didn’t want Ouyang Tao to leave the library, which was a safe haven, and venture outside into the danger — — If it were like what Ouyang Tao thought, the attacker would come to seek him out yet again.

“But, I can’t keep hiding here.” Ouyang Tao knew that he would be in danger, but he could not use this as a reason to escape. As a man, how could he shrink away like this. Ouyang Tao gritted his teeth and asked: “Senior, if I were to fight him, what do you think my chances of victory are?”

“.....” Zhao Yuehan remained silent, as she stared at Ouyang Tao for some time. She looked like she was seriously doing an evaluation of him. After five minutes, she concluded, “It’s possible, but the chances are very low.”

“That’s enough.” Ouyang Tao was determined, “Senior, I’m not going to run away this time. If that fellow comes and looks for trouble, I’m going to settle it with him once and for all!”

“Is it.....” Although Zhao Yuehan did not attempt to stop him, her slight change in tone revealed the worry she had for Ouyang Tao. However, she also knew that there was no stopping him.

Ouyang Tao seemed to have realised Zhao Yuehan’s worries, “Don’t worry, senior. I promised you before that I’ll come to the library every day to read with you. I will keep to my promise.

The youth’s words were filled with a sure win determination that even Zhao Yuehan felt encouraged. She nodded slightly: “Alright, I believe you.”

The young girl’s eyes followed the young boy’s back as he slowly left. As his figure slowly disappeared, she returned back to the manager’s counter where

they had initially met and sat down quietly. She picked up her book as she awaited for his return.

Leaving the library, Ouyang Tao immediately returned to the dormitory to collect the savings he had kept hidden under a box. After that, he went to the warehouse to redeem whatever materials he had left for the remainder of the month. He also used all his savings to purchase more materials.

Then, he brought an automated pushcart filled with all his general alloys and roughly refined magic stones to the weapon testing arena. Using the previous three ideas he worked on, he modified and created another three rifles of each type for testing. Using the live data he had obtained, he repeatedly modified the weapons and tested them.

From morning till evening, Ouyang Tao had been continuously experimenting. Eventually, he had completed three different weapons.

According to his first idea, he reduced the power of the rifle. It attacks by using interference magic and EMP. It was called the “Electrical.Commotion”.

According to his second idea, he used an ammunition style to fire bullets, and sacrificed the ability to continuously fire. However, he largely increased the power, stability and trajectory of the weapon. It was called the “Electrical.Longbow”.

According to his third idea, he reconstructed the basic structure of the weapon. It now had the ability to alter the shape of the barrel to release excess power instantaneously as the weapon is about to overload. This way, he could maintain the weapon’s original characteristic of continuity yet also improve its power. It was called the “Electrical.Thunderclap”.

After that, Ouyang Tao created a certain number of each weapon based on his needs and checked the quality of each before storing them inside boxes.

With the remaining materials and magic stones, Ouyang Tao created the hexagonal defence unit which he had previously used during his battle with Tia and stored them in a box as well.

Lastly, Ouyang Tao placed all his weapon boxes onto his automated push cart and left the arena.

Due to the fact that all Mechanical Engineering students kept their personal techniques completely secret, every testing arena was completely isolated from another. Ouyang Tao had not expected another person to be pushing a pushcart out of the arena. Both of them met face to face with each other.

“Tia, you’re here too.” Although he and Tia were still competing with each other, Ouyang Tao did not want to make their relationship too sour and hence courteously greeted her, who knew.....

“Eh?! AHH! You..... You.....” But who knew that Tia would turn pale from shock. She kept retreating until she nearly fell down. Not only that, she had also taken out her weapon from her weapon box and set it up mid air.

Ouyang Tao was equally shocked by her actions as he removed his defence unit from his weapon box as well: “Oi, what are you doing! Other than the battle arena and the testing arena and when one’s life was threatened, it’s strictly prohibited to use weapons!”

“A..... Are you a human or ghost!”

“Bullshit! Of course I’m human!”

Tia still did not completely believe him and remained cautious: “Are..... Are you really that peasant kid Ouyang Tao?”

“If not, who do you think I am. Put down your weapon. I don’t have many materials and don’t want to waste them on you.” Ouyang Tao had taken out all of his money to prepare to engage the mysterious man in battle. He couldn’t afford to waste any resources.

This was definitely the tone of the peasant kid; tough and stubborn, not giving her the due respect as the highest ranked student in Mechanical Engineering

(That was how Tia felt).

Therefore, Tia let out a long sigh of relief, withdrew her magic, and returned her weapon back into the box: “So that means you aren’t dead?”

“Of course I’m not dead.” Ouyang Tao let out a sigh of relief as well, while storing his defence unit back into the box. It seemed as though the misunderstanding had been cleared.

Wait, something was fishy. Ouyang Tao asked in confusion: “Wait..... Who said I was dead?”

Volume 1 Chapter 30.5 – Interval #10

The same student being assaulted twice. This made the whole incident seem like it was an attack that targeted Mechanical Engineering students. Even Lu Yun wondered whether there was a lapse in his judgement.

“Professor Lu, your student, our junior and dorm mate has not yet been ascertained to be alive or dead. How could you just sit down and not do anything?” In Lu Yun’s office, Monica and Chen Feng sat opposite of him. None of them had expected that the situation would become like this.

As Lu Yun talked, he was also deep in thought, and wondered where the lapse in his judgement was: “Although the situation isn’t clear, there is one point I can confirm and it’s that the boy is definitely fine.”

“How could you tell?”

“The commotion caused by the attack at the hospital was visibly much larger than the previous three incidents. This meant that it was done on purpose to attract attention. Then, at another place, a fresh attack incident happened and although there weren’t any casualties, what was left behind were the signs of a violent clash.”

“Which means?”

“It means that someone saved the boy from the hospital ahead of us.”

Chen Feng frowned in uncertainty and Monica also found it hard to believe. Since the hospital was tightly guarded and the time between the two incidents

was not far apart, considering the distance between the library and the scene of the five assault case, it didn't seem that realistic at all.

“Able to sneak a live person out of the hospital without anyone noticing? He's not from Spirits, this probably is..... Wait.....” Halfway while speaking, Monica seemed to have figured out something — — There was actually someone in the school who could do that. “Spirits? It can't be?”

“That's hard to say. Which is why I want the two of you to follow me to the library to check it out.”

Inside the library, Zhao Yuehan sat quietly at the manager's counter and silently read the library book in her hand. When Lu Yun, Monica and Chen Feng were about five to six metres away from her, she suddenly looked up and said: “He already left.”

“Eh? We haven't even asked yet?” Monica blinked, could it be just like the rumours say? That this lass could predict the future?

“No need to speak, I understand your reason.” Zhao Yuehan calmly answered.

To prevent any misconceptions, Lu Yun confirmed one more time: “Which means that it was you who saved Ouyang Tao, and he had already left the library?”

“Yes.” Zhao Yuehan nodded. “He saved me too.”

Hearing this, the three of them heaved a sigh of relief. Even though they didn't know what had happened, all that mattered was that Ouyang Tao was safe.

“Please help him.” This time, Zhao Yuehan took the initiative to speak. “He chose to fight.”

“Fight? What does that mean? You can't mean that the kid is going to fight alone against the attacker?” Monica panicked. Chen Feng who was beside him frowned again — — To someone that didn't have much battle experience, that

was too rash.

“No, what he did was right!” If Ouyang Tao did not die and was preparing for battle, the attacker would definitely appear again — The most important thing this time was that the attacker’s target could be confirmed. “Monica, go to the warehouse to check whether Ouyang Tao withdrew any materials and at what quantities.”

“Understood.” As Monica said that, she sprung into action immediately.

“Chen Feng, go to the weapon testing arena to search for Ouyang Tao. He must be there somewhere. Find him and protect him secretly.”

Chen Feng nodded and sprang into action as well.

This time, Lu Yun placed all his bets on Ouyang Tao. If there was another failure, he wouldn’t be able to face himself anymore.

“Thank you, Zhao Yuehan student. Don’t worry, Ouyang Tao is my student. I’ll ensure that he’ll be alright.” Lu Yun assured her.

“Please do.” Zhao Yuehan replied before looking down and returning to her book.

Her heart however was no longer on the book.

Volume 1 Chapter 31 – The Widely Regarded Truth And The Bias

After discerning that it was all just a misunderstanding, Tia and Ouyang Tao kept their weapons before pushing their pushcarts away together while trying to make clear of the entire situation. What made Ouyang Tao more relaxed was the fact that there were no guards around them.

“According to what you said, when the attacked happened, you weren’t at the hospital and had already been saved by the girl from the library?”

“Oh yeah, does it mean that because there was no corpse, I was listed as missing?”

“Mn, but in Augustus Academy, missing people are basically dead.” Tia said, as she looked at Ouyang Tao’s pushcart. “Anyway, aren’t you hardworking? Having just narrowly escaped death and you’re already here hard at work. Do you want to beat me that much?”

After the forced draw in the freshman guidance match a few days ago, Tia had borne a grudge. She also had not expected Ouyang Tao to be so skilled due to his commoner background. He didn’t have the basic foundations normal students had and therefore did not attack with a normal routine, which caused her to fly into a panic.

Aside from that, Ouyang Tao using her machine that survived at the last moment was also a miscalculation on Tia’s part.

No matter what, when analyzing the match properly, if she had calmly proceeded with the match, there was a thousand ways for Tia to win. Therefore, this time she would give it her all, and win with absolute certainty during their next battle.

Even though she put it that way, it was impossible to guarantee her victory. Hence, she didn't dare to relax one bit. She focused her entire attention on developing new techniques. Furthermore, who knew what kind of odd techniques Ouyang Tao had in store the next time they fought.

However, regarding that match's result, Ouyang Tao didn't take it too seriously — At least, he didn't treat it as seriously as Tia did: "I know that I can't beat you. What happened then was just luck."

"Luck? Hmph, you don't feel embarrassed saying it?" When hearing this, Tia became unhappy, "Do you know how many people in these past seven years, wanted to be that 'lucky'?"

"It's because you all use the same type of weapons and machines. The fact that your skill level, weapon completion level and level of modifications of the product is much higher than others, and that you always beat your opponents. For me however, I use things that you have never seen before. That's why I said that I was lucky. I know that relying on such tricks will not work all the time."

"Hmph, at least you know it yourself" Although what Ouyang Tao said was true, it coming out of the opponent mouth made Tia unhappy. "But your attitude still sucks."

"What did I do?" Ouyang Tao was confused by what she had said.

Tia felt that this was the right time to make it clear with Ouyang Tao: "Don't think that just because you have a bit of talent, you can act arrogantly. There are others in the Academy that are stronger than you!"

"I know that?"

“Then what was with your attitude during the Freshman welcome dinner?”

“Heh, you still dare to mention that!” At the mention of the welcome dinner, Ouyang Tao also grew a little unhappy. “The few of you talked and laughed together. What was the meaning of ostracising me aside? Furthermore, I’m poor so I’ve never eaten western cuisine before. Yet I didn’t want to stay hungry, so I ate using my own way. What’s wrong with that?”

“You.....” After being told off by Ouyang Tao like so, Tia felt that she was the one in the wrong.

That lonely ostracised feeling was something that Tia had experienced before. Being the only girl from Mechanical Engineering, she was also ostracised during her welcome dinner.

However, even if she realised that, Tia still did not want to admit it. Instead, she changed the topic of their conversation: “What’s in those boxes?”

“Weapons that I just completed. Want to see?”

“Eh?” Tia was stunned for a moment, and then smiled bitterly as she shook her head: “I say, aren’t you too trusting?”

“What’s wrong this time?”

Is this kid really stupid or is he acting? Tia asked doubtfully: “I’m going to be your opponent next time. Are you sure you want to let me see your finished product? I would be able to see your techniques.”

“It doesn’t matter. The more techniques are discussed, the more it can be improved.” Ouyang Tao really did not mind. “Anyways, you’re my senior so you might be able to give me some advice.”

As he said that, he had stopped walking and opened the three weapon boxes. Tia was a knowledgeable person, so she knew at a glance what he was making: “A modification of an electrical rifle? I really didn’t expect you to put effort on

such a weapon. You even made three versions of it.”

“Yup, just take a look at it.”

“Okay, don’t mind me then.”

No matter what, this was a good chance for Tia to check out her opponent. Tia casually picked up the “Electrical.Longbow” and examined it. Then, she picked up one of its ammunition and examined it closely.

After that, Tia picked up the other two modified weapons and looked at them for a while. Throughout this process, she didn’t speak a single word. However, her expression became strange. After some time, she finally spoke: “How long have you been fiddling with this?”

“Two to three days? Why?”

“No..... Nothing.....” In a mere two to three days, a once failure and impractical product could be modified to be such an amazing weapon. Tia felt a little unhappy: “You actually manage to think of modifications for this.”

“Hehe, actually, the idea wasn’t mine. It was Edward’s. I just put it into practical use.”

Hearing the name, Tia let out a face of disgust and suspicion: “Edward? You talking about that daydreamer of a weakling? Speaking of him, the two of you are quite close right?”

“You’re a young lady from a highly regarded noble family, watch your language.” Ouyang Tao still treated Edward like a friend and senior — at least for now. “Edward’s not a daydreamer, it’s just that his body is unwell and he can’t put his ideas into practical use.”

“Isn’t that the same? Granting elements to weapons, magical shielding, and an army of transforming machinery. He even wanted to develop a machine that could use magic. Truthfully speaking, who hasn’t thought of that? But it’s

difficult to put it into practical use.”

“Eh? You have seen Edward’s works?”

“Need I see? Those are the only things he used to talk about. I even had to teach him a lesson a couple of times.”

Ouyang Tao didn’t want to say too much. He already knew that in the field of Mechanical Engineering, “daydreamer” and “weakling” was what was what they regarded him as.

“However, if someone were to really be able to put his nonsense into practical use, that person perhaps..... would be really good.” Tia returned the weapon to its original position as she continued speaking: “Also, his predicament would change if he were to bring out a few prototypes earlier and not just talk about his theories.”

Ouyang Tao didn’t seem to care and close the lid of his weapon box: “Speaking of which, I guess you didn’t ask him before right?”

“Of course, I already said that everyone’s techniques are all kept strictly private. Who would even go and ask a question regarding a person’s techniques.” As she said it, Tia also found out what was wrong.

“That’s right, if you did not ask, he sure wouldn’t say it.” Ouyang Tao motioned with his hands, acting like it was natural.

“Does that mean that you asked him?”

“That’s right, Edward originally gave me three ideas for modifications. I felt that since all three ideas were good, I made all three versions of it.”

“Then you just showed it to me like this, aren’t you afraid I would copy you or make it even better and use it to beat you next time?” What Tia said was the very reason Mechanical Engineering students kept their techniques a secret from one another.

“Sheesh.....” Ouyang Tao let out a deep sigh while shaking his head. Then he spoke in a more serious tone: “Tia senior, I would have thought you, as a senior, would understand this more than me.”

“What..... What do you mean?” It was ruder than before. Tia felt that Ouyang Tao’s current attitude which exhibited some pity was more atrocious than before.

“Between you and me it’s just win or lose and not a matter of life and death. At most it’s just a few points and some face. How big could it be? When in the battlefield, we are one united country.”

“.....”

Hearing this, Tia was speechless. She pursed her lips and did not speak a single word — What a simple logic, why did I only realize it now?

At this time, Ouyang Tao suddenly stopped at a slightly more open area: “Okay, here seems about right, I’ll just stay here.”

Tia suddenly felt that the aura coming off of Ouyang Tao body had changed — It was now a solemn feeling, like a warrior leaving and never returning: “Eh? What are you going to do?”

“I’m waiting for someone, you can leave first.” Ouyang Tao tone of speech became more determined.

Should I stay and see what he’s doing? Soon, Tia decided not to do that: “Okay then, be careful.”

At this time, the sky had already started to darken.....

Volume 1 Chapter 32 – I Really Hoped That It Wasn't You

After separating with Ouyang Tao, Tia felt very irritated.

Even though he was clearly an opponent, when she heard that he was missing after being attacked again at the hospital, Tia was upset for quite a while — Don't misunderstand, this was because she had finally found a worthy opponent after a long time and was prepared to fight him once again. If he suddenly met with such a mishap, wouldn't her preparations have been for naught?

But when she found out that Ouyang Tao was fine, she could not cheer up at all. Instead she became angry: "He actually treated our match so lightly..... Detestable....."

Although Tia could complain like this when she was alone, when facing him, she couldn't do it. That was because what Ouyang Tao had said was true.

Didn't it mean that the ones who were petty and could not see the big picture was her and most of the other Mechanical Engineering students? This dealt a blow to Tia's pride and honour as a member of a noble family.

Then, a silver haired young girl slowly walked towards her. She had her head held low, and look very sad. Both her eyes were red and puffy. Obviously, she had cried very badly. As she walked towards Tia, Tia found her to be very familiar..... AHH, that's right, she was at the hospital the day before. She should be Ouyang Tao's sister.

Seeing how the young girl looked, she probably didn't know that her brother was fine. Tia started to complain in her heart once again. That jerk, once he was safe, he started to work again. Did he not even bother to inform his family beforehand?

As she was about to walk past Tia, she called out to her: "Young lady, are you Ouyang Tao's sister?"

"Ehhh?" Hearing this, she immediately stopped and looked at Tia confusingly "You are? You went to visit brother yesterday....."

"It's not important who I am, your brother is at the the No. 4 sports arena. He said he was waiting for someone."

"Eh? Real..... Really?" Hearing this news, Ouyang Xue was both surprised and ecstatic "Wasn't brother..... He....."

"Yeah, when I saw him at the weapon testing ground, I was shocked as well. It seems like someone saved him from the hospital yesterday. He looked alright."

"Wahhh, that's great!" Hearing this, Ouyang Xue immediately shed tears of joy and jumped in elation: "That's right. Big sis, what's your name?"

"I'm Tia."

"Thank you senior Tia. Then I'm off to find my brother." As she finished talking, she sprinted towards the direction Tia talked about.

Such an innocent and lively sister, so much cuter than Ouyang Tao. Tia thought as she continued walking.

Unknown to Tia, something awaited her in front.

Placing the automated pushcart filled with weapon to his side, Ouyang Tao sat cross-legged at the sports arena, and ate the dried rations in his hands as he

waited for the arrival of the masked man — — If he was who Ouyang Tao thought it was, he would definitely appear again.

Despite already making all the preparations he could possibly make, he was still very nervous — — This was not a guidance match, if he failed, he really would die.

“No, that won’t happen. I must live, I promised Zhao Yuehan senior……” Ouyang Tao kept this in his mind, using it to encourage himself.

Just at that time, a voice made him lose all thought of battle.

“BRO!!”

“EH? Ah Xue? WAHHH — — !” Ouyang Xue didn’t say much as she sprinted towards Ouyang Tao and violently pounced on him, making him collapse onto the ground.

“Bro, Why…… Why didn’t you tell me that you were fine…… Where have you been…… Uuu……” Ouyang Xue laid on her brother’s chest and cried as her fist continuously beat on Ouyang Tao’s body, partly reprimanding him but more so due to her agitation.

Ouyang Tao felt equally broken hearted as well. These past two days, his sister had been crying for him in worry. He had never seen his sister so sad before.

“Okay okay, it’s all my fault. I should have told you immediately.” Ouyang Tao lost any mood to face the masked man as he continued to console his sister, “Have you eaten?”

“No.”

Facing such a situation, Ouyang Tao employed his usual tactic of using food as temptation: “Then let me cook your favourite seafood fried rice ok?”

“No, I don’t want to eat.” However this time, the temptation of food failed. Ouyang Xue just hugged her brother tightly, “Bro, don’t leave me ever again alright?”

“Mn. I won’t, I definitely won’t.....” Ouyang Tao smiled bitterly as he gently caressed his sister’s back to gradually calm her down.

After a while, Ouyang Xue finally calmed down, but no matter what she did not want to leave her brother again. Therefore, Ouyang Tao could only let her stay with him for one night.

One had to admire the work of Augustus Academy’s repair team; Ouyang Tao’s dormitory had already returned to its original form. However, just as Ouyang Tao was about to enter his dormitory, a loud explosion was heard not far away. Flames blaze from the doors and windows around the dormitory.

“Careful!” Ouyang Tao immediately protected his sister — he knew that the attacker had come. This time however, after the first explosion, there was a new explosion elsewhere.

Obviously, that was the sound of battle, Ouyang Tao immediately made his decision: “Ah Xue, quickly find a place to hide.”

“Bro, what about you?”

“I’m going to help!” As Ouyang Tao said that, he set his pushcart to maximum speed and sprinted to the scene of explosion.

This time, the one that was being attacked was not any stranger. It was Tia.

The method of attack was the same as before; it was a sudden explosion. At that point, Tia had just returned to her room and relaxed — which made it a good opportunity for the attacker to strike.

However, being the best student in Mechanical Engineering, how could Tia suffer from a sneak attack so easily. When she felt something wrong and felt the

quick approach of a strong pressure, she immediately used the materials at hand to block the first round of attacks.

Following which, she took a good look at the attacker — He was wearing a mask and dressed in an exaggerating red ancient robe: “Hmph, so the culprit is such a person!”

The attacker did not speak. He merely lifted his hand and a scarlet red light immediately shot out. However, Tia did not use Mechanical Engineering Magic to create a weapon. Instead, she nimbly dodged it, and took something from the debris to block the next attack.

It was a longsword — Tia was not only a Mechanical Master who was a graduate student, she was also studying Magical Swordsmanship as a supplementary course. So other than Mechanical Engineering, her personal combat skills were also very strong.

Therefore, she was unsatisfied with just protecting her life. After being sneakily attacked, she wanted to retaliate in full force: “Don’t put me on the same level as that guy. Take this!”

The attacker did not dodge, he just raised his hand against the attack. A red orb blocked Tia’s sharp sword and after that, there was an explosion. The impact of the explosion knocked Tia away. Taking this opportunity, the attacker turned into red light and flew away.

Right at this time, two streaks of blue and white light, shot from a distance away, collided with the red light that was in mid-air. After that, the red light returned into human form, and dropped onto the ground.

“Don’t think that you can escape this time!” Ouyang Tao prepared his weapon and appeared in front of the attacker.

“You brat..... Forget it, at least you stopped him from escaping.” Behind him, Tia caught up to him wielding her sword.

“Hmph, just in time.....” Despite being attacked from the front and back, the attacker didn’t have any intention of escaping. He merely muttered in a low voice.

Seeing the attacker raise both his hands to all of a sudden drop them, a thirty to forty metre radius ring of fire surrounded them and blocked out anybody that came due to the commotion. “Let’s die together.....”

“If we’re really about to die, let me find out something first.” Rather than focusing on the battle, which concerned their life and death, Ouyang Tao was more concerned of another matter. “Is that really you, Edward!”

“Hmph, looks like you found out.....” The attacker laughed coldly, and removed his mask. He revealed a face that Ouyang Tao seem to know, but looked unfamiliar.

It really was Edward. However, that face lacked his usual gentle grace and modesty. The face in front of them was filled with ferocity and hatred, and on his head was a head ornament — — it was the Demon King Relic, Lucifer’s Crown.

“How can it be him?!” Tia had not expected it at all, Edward — — the daydreamer and weakling from Mechanical Engineering. How could there be such a scary side to him.

However, Ouyang Tao had already connected the dots based on the clues Zhao Yuehan had provided. But he had hoped that it wasn’t the truth.....

Volume 1 Chapter 33 – The Explosion Of Accumulated Rancor

Edward — — The one who wasn't recognised, the one who the masses treated lightly. The suppressed sorrow that was in his heart was something only he knew.

It was not that he did not want to retaliate. It was not that he would not feel hatred and angry. It was the fact that he didn't have the strength. That was why he could only choose to shrink back and endure it.....

So what would happen once he obtained strength? Edward's choice was already clearly seen — — he would no longer remain quiet and give in. Instead, he chose violent revenge and destruction.

Despite that, Ouyang Tao believed that this was not Edward's inner nature: "Stop it, you can't escape anymore. I know you can turn yourself into an element, and I also know how to stop it. I proved it just now."

"Hoho..... You're right, you are talented..... That's why I'm envious of you..... So envious of you..... That I want to kill you!" Edward raised his hand and countless orbs appeared to shoot towards Ouyang Tao.

This time however, Ouyang Tao was well prepared. Ten "Electrical.Commotion" flew in mid-air, constructing a spiderweb-like interference field that absorbed all the orb up top and gradually disintegrated them.

“Magic Interference Net..... Hoho..... Just two days and you turned up with a finished product.” Edward grinned as he said that — This was a product that he was incapable of finishing, something that was laughed at by others who treated it like mere imagination. And Ouyang Tao only took two days to come up with a product capable of being used in battles.

“What’s the use of so much senseless talk, get rid of him!” Tia who was standing behind Ouyang Tao became impatient, she wielded her sword and sprinted towards Ouyang Tao. However, Edward didn’t even look at her and just waved his hands, producing a red light that forced Tia backwards.

“You remain silent first, I will slowly take revenge for your insults and contempt.” It was clear that the current Edward spoke as if Ouyang Tao wasn’t his enemy, “Frankly speaking, I didn’t actually want to kill you....”

“No, not only me..... Edward, you’re not someone like that. It must be Lucifer’s crown affecting your personality, it must be.....”

“No, this is me! The real me!” Edward took a big step forward. The step that was filled with hatred and anger shattered the ground. His tightly clenched fist let out an abnormal red light, which soon turned into an unblockable shock wave, forcing away the Interference Field in front of Ouyang Tao that moved towards him.

However, Ouyang Tao was already prepared, ten “Electrical.Thunderclap” shot out strong electrical currents from behind him, striking the scarlet red shockwave. Both were equally matched for a while.

Using this opportunity, Tia once again launched an attack, and teamed up with Ouyang Tao to attack Edward. Using her sharp sword that had a dark freezing cold aura, she aimed at Edward’s throat for a fatal blow.

Edward’s right hand continued to be in a stalemate with Ouyang Tao and the back of his left hand blocked Tia’s strike: “I remember that you said that I only daydream right?”

“Wasn’t that the truth?” Although she said that, Tia’s sword was being heavily

suppressed by Edward's magic. She was unable to harm his body at all. Hence she continued increasing her strength.

"Hmph." Edward snorted, and his figure suddenly disappeared. Ouyang Tao's lightning, which lost its target, struck Tia's sword.

"Drats!" Ouyang Tao tried to stop his attack immediately but it was too late.

"EEEEEEAAAA — — !" Being struck by the lightning made Tia scream out loud. The long sword left her hands and she was knocked unconscious by the lightning. If it weren't for her strong magic and resistance, she would have died instantly.

"Now it's you and me."

"What..... Uwaaa — — !"

Due to the mistake which injured Tia, Ouyang Tao lost concentration. He didn't notice that Edward had already snuck behind him to ruthlessly throw a heavy punch at Ouyang Tao's chest, causing him to get knocked away.

Despite the battleground being enclosed by the fire, the people outside could hear clearly the battle going on within but was unable to help due to the scorching magical flame wall. A couple of fearless guards tried to rush in but were all deflected back by the outer layer magic. They didn't even get to go near the flame.

It turned out that this was not an ordinary flame wall. It was a flame spiral that turned at high speeds. If the impact against the wall was not large enough, the person would be deflected. Even if he managed to breakthrough, he would most likely be disintegrated by the flames.

This was the power of the Demon King's relic.

"Brat, don't go over!" Monica hugged her waist, trying to protect Ouyang Xue from rushing into the flames.

“Brother’s inside! I can’t let him leave me anymore! There’s no way! Let me go, LET ME GO!! AHHH — — !!!” However, Ouyang Xue screams and ferocious struggling even caused Monica’s abnormal strength to struggle slightly.

The numerous guards and disciplinary team members could all be considered experts but when faced with the flame wall, they were all helpless — — This was because it was a flame wall that used the power of a Demon King. It couldn’t be so easily broken through.

However, there was one exception. Chen Feng took off his jacket, revealing a well toned body that was covered in scars. He planted his arms on his waist, blocking the storm caused by the flame wall. Step by step, he slowly approached the flame wall — — This was something only he, who continuously trained his body in magic and possessed high magic resistance and a strong body, could do.

Then, Chen Feng’s arm aimed at the flame wall and jabbed out strongly. Both his arms entered the flame spiral before he went in altogether. Then, he emitted a formless aura from his body towards his surroundings. He became like a giant boulder that was thrown into a stream, as he forcefully slowed the spinning of the spirals.

“Someone is interfering..... Ugh..... It’s the silent sword.....” Edward realised the abnormality in the flame wall. However, he also knew that to break through the obstacle, Chen Feng still needed time.

Therefore, Edward turned and faced Ouyang Tao who had already stood up: “I already said, I didn’t want to kill you originally.”

“Why..... Why is that..... Ugh.....” The punch that Edward had thrown earlier was filled with scorching hot flame magic. Although he felt something absorbing some damage for him, Ouyang Tao’s injuries were still serious as he vomited blood a couple of times.

“Weren’t you a smart person? Guess!” As he spoke, Edward waved his hand casually and another red light shot towards Ouyang Tao.

There was the sounds of an explosion but Ouyang Tao remained fine. His defence units had blocked the strike.

However, Edward was not surprised. He didn't plan to end Ouyang Tao's life just like that. To him, showing off why he did this was more meaningful than just killing — — In other words, these were the actions of Edward's negative feelings.

Everything would only stop when Edward was satisfied, or when someone finally stopped him.....

Volume 1 Chapter 33.5 – Interval #11

Countless days ago.....

“You see, if we released the magic in a spider web like structure, we would be able to stop slightly slower or less powerful forms of magic using the web structure.....” Edward pointed at the image, trying to explain his creativity to Tia and other senior Mechanical Engineering students.

But, Tia did not care: “Enough! Do you know how much magic is needed to construct the magic web that you said? What about its stability? I say, don’t talk about such useless ideas anymore.”

“What useless ideas? This is a breakthrough between technique and magic!”

“Then make one and show us.”

“You.....”

“If you can’t make it, isn’t it a useless idea?”

Everytime the conversation steered to this point, Edward became speechless. Given his skill level, he was unable to achieve the precision and power needed for the design — Furthermore, even if he was able to achieve it, he needed a large number of experiments to demonstrate and modify his product.

Mechanical Engineering magicians were battle magicians. All their techniques are meant for battle. Also, due to the frequent scoring matches between

students, no one was willing to invest the much time, effort and materials in such a meaningless experiment.

“Be practical Edward, don’t do such meaningless things anymore.” As Tia spoke, she threw away the blueprints and notes in her hand, scattering them all around — — To her, they were meaningless pieces of paper.

“Oi, don’t throw them away.” Still, these “meaningless pieces of paper” were Edward’s hard work. He quickly gathered all the scattered papers and arranged them in order.

“Edward, stop daydreaming.”

“Do something practical.”

“You’re rubbish, you only know how to brag.”

The other students also left with a look of disdain, leaving behind only their cruel insults, disdain and mockery.....

“Enough..... I had enoughhhhhh — — ! *Cough Cough*..... Only he was left in the small meeting room. The suffering Edward wanted to scream out loud to let off some of the anger building in him. However, all that came was an immediate coughing.

Despicable..... So despicable..... I could only blame myself, blame my weak body. If only I wasn’t plagued by this chronic illness. I could at least do something to prove myself, to prove that I’m not a daydreamer.

“If only I had strength..... If only I had enough strength.....”

“Then what would you do?”

“Eh?” Edward looked up and saw a man who was not supposed to be there sitting at the window ledge. Due to his back facing the sun, Edward couldn’t see

his face clearly but felt that he was someone who was the same age as him.
“Who are you?”

“It does not matter who I am, what matters is.....” He jumped down from the window ledge and walked slowly towards Edward, “What matters is why you are willing to put up with those ignorant fools. They are not fit to discuss such a level of problem with you.”

Hearing that, Edward seemed to have understood something. That’s right, I’m the real genius. Those fools are ignorant and narrow-minded, why would I want to bother with their idiotic views.

Then, the stranger spoke again: “That’s right, what did you say just now? You wanted power right?”

“Yes, I want power! The power to be able to prove myself.”

“Haha..... Just that only?”

The man words let off an ominous feeling, making Edward uncomfortable for a moment. However, he chose to continue the conversation: “What..... What do you mean?”

“You have suffered insult, being looked down on and all kinds of unfair treatment. The hatred in your heart, do you want to let it go just like this?”

“That.....” Edward hesitated for a moment before replying “Of course not!”

“That’s right, make them experience ten times or even a hundred times the pain!”

“Of course!”

“Good.” The man said, as he placed a head ornament in front of Edward, “Wear it, and experience the power you want.”

“This is.....” Edward curiously took the head ornament over. When he looked up again, the man had already disappeared.....

Volume 1 Chapter 34 – The Bitter Struggle Within The Stalemate

Facing the hatred-filled Edward, Ouyang Tao was both sad and helpless.

Sad because he didn't want the situation to turn out like this. Although they became acquainted not too long ago, Ouyang Tao had already treated Edward like a dependable friend.

Helpless because he knew of Edward's suffering and hatred, but was unable to help. He could only feel pity for his talent had been overlooked.

And now, Ouyang Tao could only do one thing as a friend. Which was to stop Edward's current madness.

Since he had already completed all the preparations he could complete, he would no longer retreat. Ouyang Tao stood up, as an orb that he used to control magic appeared in his left hand. He was ready to fight.

Edward felt the aura that Ouyang Tao gave off change, and closed his eyes: "Ooo, you finally accepted the truth? Looks like you're prepared to give it your all."

"Yes, I'm prepared to give it my all." Ouyang Tao was determined to fight. However, it was not to destroy, but to protect. "Edward, I believe that this is not the real you."

"No more nonsense!" Following an angry shout, Edward fired his red light

everywhere, shooting down all of Ouyang Tao's "Electrical.Commotion" from mid-air, before turning into red light himself, while preparing to use the same technique.

This time, Ouyang Tao was already prepared. The "Electrical.Longbow" behind him accurately fired off, and knocked the red light out of mid-air.

Immediately, Ouyang Tao changed from defence to attack. Fifteen "Electrical.Longbow" split into three groups and moved around while firing from different positions. It continuously shot out strong beams of light and used its continuous firepower to suppress Edward.

However, what Ouyang Tao was doing was not meaningless suppressing, he had one aim — the Lucifer's Crown on Edward's head.

Zhao Yuehan had explained it before, the power of the original sins were balanced . Even though Lucifer's crown provided such a strong power, it also made a certain part of the user's sense weaken.

As long as he could find the weak point, Ouyang Tao would be able to attack the relic using that advantage. As long as he could destroy the head ornament, Edward would return to normal — That was what Ouyang Tao thought.

"Despicable..... Despicable....." The retaliation came suddenly, and facing all around attacks made Edward stumble. He could only focus defending and dodging.

However, such a situation did not make Edward restrain himself. Instead, he became even crazier. He raised his hands again and created a magical array in the sky: "Divine Punishment, Spellfire Calamity!"

The magical array expanded in the sky before shooting out countless bullets which fell like rain. It looked as if the doomsday told in legends had arrived, but....

"Divine Punishment, Destroyer of Earth!" The attacks came one after another,

and did not give Ouyang Tao time to react. A magical array appeared on the ground below Ouyang Tao. Then, it exploded and lava splashed out, causing Ouyang Tao to lose his ground.

“That was close.....” Luckily, Ouyang Tao manage to stand on a few defense units he placed in mid-air, hence, avoiding the strike. However, there was someone else trapped here! “Oh no, Tia wouldn’t.....”

“I’m not dead!” Tia of course would not die in the fire. She had unknowingly changed into a purple and black compression battle suit. She stood on a windball that rose into the air. She was above Edward. Holding her sword with both hands, she aiming it at Edward’s head, and quickly flew down.

This time, Edward was visibly slower than before, as he only realised it right before the sword was about to take his life. Despite dodging hastily, Tia’s sword still left a long scar on his body.

After striking him successfully but not achieving what she initially planned, Tia continued her attack. The longsword that was shining brightly in gold light aimed at Edward’s throat once again, and tried to stab him.

This time, Edward manage to block it immediately. At the same time, Ouyang Tao also used his “Electrical.Longbow” to attack him. Edward pushed Tia back and blocked Ouyang Tao’s attack at the same time.

“Ugh..... Not bad..... Haha..... I can tell.....” The injured Edward appeared even more ferocious as he shot a malicious glare at Tia, “I can tell that you’re not like that brat, and really want to kill me..... Haha.....”

“What?” Ouyang Tao was surprised, “What are you doing!? You really want to kill him?”

However, Tia also had her reason: “Then do you want to be killed by him?”

“Kill me? That’s good, that should be they way! Kid, watch and learn. If you do not have that sort of killing intent, you can’t do anything.” However, Edward

relied on the strength the relic provided. He was not afraid and the scar on his body recovered quickly.

It looked as if matters were getting more and more extreme. It was getting out of Ouyang Tao's hand. This time, Edward was going to use an even more crazier attack.....

Outside the fighting zone, other than Chen Feng who relied on his personal abilities to try and forcefully breakthrough the flame wall, the others were all helpless. Chen Feng was unable to move inside the flames and the other two would definitely be unable to put up a fight with the demon king's relic.

Furthermore, if the culprit escaped this time, there would not be a second chance to catch him.

Monica knew this and decided to lend a hand.

"Professor Lu, I'll hand this kid to you." Monica knocked out Ouyang Xue who was still crying and struggling before passing her over to Lu Yun. Then, she fished out a blue dragon scale from her twin peaks and shouted towards the people around. "All of you make way!"

Everyone scattered immediately and left behind an empty space. After absorbing the dragon scale and turning it into her strength, her body transformed. A gigantic ice pillar immediately formed around Monica. Suddenly, it shattered and a twenty metre long dragon appeared. (T/L note: Wooo, there are dragonssss)

"Ice Breath!" After turning into the ice dragon who represented the water element, Monica immediately attacked, spitting out an ice beam at the flame wall, and weakened the flame spiral.

However, it was still not enough.....

With this breach, Lu Yun made a prompt decision: "Everyone, focus your strength on suppressing the flame wall, quick!" The hundred or so people in the

area immediately sprang into action. No matter how strong or weak, everyone released their water magic in full force, and assisted Monica in suppressing the flame spiral.

Staying in the fire, Chen Feng felt the power of the flame weaken. He immediately increased his strength, and the magic he used caused his body to shine in a metallic silver colour.

Chen Feng was very similar to Ouyang Tao, both of their magical attributes were dominated by metallic properties. However, Chen Feng chose to employ it in a different way — He used it to turn himself into an indestructible sharp sword. Despite that fire was the weakness of metal, true metal does not fear fire.

And now, this sword was about to break through the flame wall obstacle.

Inside the battle, the lava made Ouyang Tao and Tia to lose their foothold. Tia could use wind magic to keep herself afloat but to Ouyang Tao, who could not use other forms of magic, this was a great disaster. Other than standing on his defence units that were in mid-air, he had no other methods.

Edward had obviously seen through this. Despite having a demon king relic that provided him with near limitless magical powers, when fighting one against two, he still had to be aware of accidents. Hence, while fighting Tia, he started to attack Ouyang Tao's foothold, not allowing him to concentrate and fire his weapon.

As the defence units fell one by one, Ouyang Tao had already dug up most of his reserves: "Damn it, if only I had materials....."

If he had materials, Tia would definitely be capable of creating something that would help him stay afloat. But how could he possibly find materials now.

From what he saw, although Tia's swordsmanship skills were not bad, that was not what she majored in. She was gradually losing out. If only I could provide her with materials.....

No, wait..... If it's materials..... There are some here!

"Tia!"

"What! Can't you see I'm busy!" Tia was engaged in an intense battle with Edward. As her golden longsword struck against the red orb, sparks flew all over the place.

She needed to focus on the battle and also maintain the windball below her feet. As time went by, her magic depleted quickly and the fight became more and more unfavourable for her.

"If I provide you with materials, could you make something!"

"Of course!" As she spoke, Edward's palm struck down strongly. Tia hastily dodged it and stabbed her sword, forcing her opponent away. "If I have materials, he would be dead by now!"

"Good, leave the materials to me!" Ouyang Tao changed his strategy and used all his magic on the lava that was flowing below.

Volume 1 Chapter 35 – Reversal And Reversal Again

Lava was a kind of mixture, and in it, were three types of elements that could be used as materials: Silicon, Aluminium and Iron — — These three elements made up nearly forty percent of lava. At the same time, there was also some of other materials that were needed to make alloys.

One of the basic skills of being a Mechanical Engineering Magician is the ability to refine and purify elements from a mixture, hence, creating materials to use. Using all of his magic, Ouyang Tao had turned the lava below him into materials.

“Tia, there are materials here, hurry!”

“You actually manage to think of this!” Tia felt slightly regretful that she had not thought of that. The lode below was originally lava too. However, now was not the time to think of these things “Instantaneous Creation!”

In one breath, Tia used up all the materials that Ouyang Tao had made, instantly creating two machines. One of them was the grade 4 “Vengeful Spirit” that she had used before, but was simplified to the simplest structure that was capable of mobility, to allow Ouyang Tao to stay in mid-air.

Tia stood on the other machine. It was a strengthened version of the Vengeful Spirit, a grade 8 machine “Demoness”. The Demoness was much bigger than Vengeful Spirit. It had a fort built on top, a huge shield, and a weapon of Tia’s choice. The weapon was two pairs of twin barrel 120mm caliber magic cannons.

However, the problem now was that there were no magic stones. Which meant that the weapons had to be powered by her and that needed time.

This time, Ouyang Tao who now stood sturdily on top of Vengeful Spirit could finally use his weapons properly. He gathered all of his defense units beside him and redeployed his weapons. He continued using three groups of “Electrical.Longbow” to attack.

The concentrated firepower did not give Edward any room to breathe and he was slowly edged to a position where Tia had the angle to strike at him.

Although Ouyang Tao and Tia did not communicate verbally, their teamwork was immaculate. After delaying for half a minute, Tia was finally prepared.

“Charge up complete, fire!” The magic cannon shot out four energy bullets at Edward.

Ouyang Tao’s ten “Electrical.Thunderclap” fired off at the same time, and launched an attack on Edward together with Tia.

However, this was insufficient to take down Edward’s defence. Scarlet red magic formed a barrier in front of him, and blocked out all the attacks: “Hmph..... That’s all you’re capable of?”

In a prolonged fight between the two parties, it was obvious that Ouyang Tao’s side was at a disadvantage — — How could he and Tia’s magic powers even compare to that of a Demon King’s relic.

Then, Edward started to increase his powers, pushing out the magic barrier bit by bit, and slowly, earned back the advantage he had.

Ouyang Tao and Tia had no means of escape and could only defend at full strength.

Seeing that his victory was more and more certain, Edward spoke: “Ouyang Tao, do you know, I’m so jealous of you. Jealous that you’re able to turn my

ideas into reality. Jealous that you're recognised by others. Jealous that you're able to choose how to lead your life..... However, these are all not the real reason I want to kill you."

"What..... What does that mean?"

"She only has you in her heart. As long as you're alive, her heart can never be mine!"

"Eh?" What does that mean? Ouyang Tao could not comprehend.

The only thing that was clear was that Edward really wanted to kill him.

"My eternal farewell!"

Just as Edward was about to deliver the killing blow, a figure broke through the flame wall and appeared. Like a sharp sword, the figure cut down at the barrier in front of Edward, instantly splitting it into two.

"What..... UWAAAAAAH—— !" The sudden blow shattered Edward's defence as fourteen energy bullets all hit Edward, causing him to fly away. At the same time, the flame wall surrounding them disappeared.

"Oh no, it can't be!" Ouyang Tao did not want to kill him even though Edward had wanted him to die. However, when he saw Edward get struck, his first reaction was to pray for his safety and immediately rushed to him on Vengeful Spirit.

Not just Ouyang Tao, the surrounding people all instantly sprinted to the point where Edward fell, however.....

The place where he fell had been a grass plain. Other than a burnt hole in the ground, there was nothing else: "No one? Why?"

While Ouyang Tao was in the middle of wondering, there was an intense

unease in his heart. At that time, there was a sudden chatter behind him, followed by a burst of flame.

Drats! Edward still has battle power!

However, it was already too late. Edward carried the unconscious Ouyang Xue and flew into the sky.

Seeing the situation, Ouyang Tao panicked: "Oi! Didn't you want to kill me! What did you grab my sister!"

"Hmph." Edward did not speak but merely turned into a red light and flew into a distance.

With no time to hesitate and think, Ouyang Tao immediately rode on "Vengeful Spirit" and gave chase.

"Idiot, it's a trap!" Although Tia complained, she still followed Ouyang Tao closely behind.

Unknowingly, Ouyang Tao had already left the school area. The red light suddenly disappeared, before another red light suddenly shot from below, shooting through his Vengeful Spirit. It shook violently before crashing down from twenty metres above ground.

This time Ouyang Tao fell quite heavily. Despite the abundance of overgrowth slowing the fall, Ouyang Tao nearly could not stand up after the fall.

The debris of Vengeful Spirit laid beside him as he tried to move his right hand, giving it some emergency treatment. However, a leg stepped on it heavily.

"Huff..... Huff..... Got tricked eh....." Edward was breathing erratically now. He was covered in blood which made him look even more hideous. He had obviously suffered injuries as well which was why he chose to ambush.

In Edward's left hand was the unconscious Ouyang Xue while his right hand concentrated magic which was aimed at Ouyang Tao: "Any last words?"

"Ah Xue would be devastated if she saw you like this..... AHHHHHH — — !" Without finishing what he wanted to say, Ouyang Tao screamed out loud in pain. That was because Edward had stomped heavily on his right arm.

"You knew..... You must have known!" Edward hysterically uttered in sadness "As long as you were alive..... Her heart would forever be yours! Which is why..... why you could say those words to me. Bastard! DIE!!!"

The fatal scorching red light chopped downwards. Ouyang Tao could not avoid it and used his left hand to block it.

However, a miracle happened. A mysterious energy absorbed the powers of Edward's attack, keeping Ouyang Tao safe.

Not only that, Ouyang Tao also felt that the injuries that he suffered fully recovered. Even some of his strength came back to him.

Just as Edward was stunned, Tia arrived. Because Ouyang Tao and Edward were too close together, so she did not dare to fire and instead charged forward with her sword.

Edward single handedly blocked her attack but was still injured. He could no longer completely defend it like before and his palm was pierced. He was forced backwards and knocked onto a huge tree behind him.

However, Tia did not expect Edward to use the opportunity of his pierced palm to grab the hilt of the sword. He held it tightly before burning the hilt bright red, forcing Tia to abandon her weapon.

However, that short instant allowed Edward to retaliate. He quickly stepped forward, turning his wrist. The sharp blade laid horizontally at Tia's neck.

"Don't move!"

Edward and Ouyang Tao shouted out loud at the same time.

In a short span of time, Ouyang Tao had used the debris from Vengeful Spirit to reconstruct a “Electrical.Longbow”, charging it up with his magic and aimed it at Edward.

“Hoho..... Isn’t this an interesting situation?” Edward savaged expression revealed a tinge of cruelty, “You only have one weapon and I have two people, which person do you choose? Hehe.....”

“Don’t fool around!”

“Stay still!” Edward shouted out loud, “Don’t try to pull any tricks, because if you do, I will immediately cut off this woman’s head and turn your beloved sister into ashes.

“You.....” Ouyang Tao gritted his teeth. He did not dare to fool around this time. He clenched his fist tightly, as beads of nervous sweat dripped from his forehead.

“Choose, or I will kill the both of them!”

Right now, the most afraid person would definitely be Tia. Because in a two choice dilemma, it was obvious who Ouyang Tao would pick.

To Ouyang Tao, this two choice dilemma was more like a bet: “Edward, even so, I choose to believe you!”

Volume 1 Chapter 36 – Conclusion Of The Storm

Actually, there were two weapons that Ouyang Tao was currently controlling but Edward could only see one. The other one he didn't see — This was due to the “toll” of using the Original Sins' Power of Pride.

That's right, it was easy to understand, a prideful person would definitely not know what laid above them.

He could save both Tia and his sister at the same time but he chose not to do so.....

If he were to attack Edward's hands, he would lose the best opportunity to attack Lucifer's Crown.

Ouyang Tao was very certain that Edward's aim now was to escape, and once he escaped, he would never be able to save Edward from the Demon King's Relic anymore. Ouyang Tao refused to give up on his friend.

So he had to gamble!

“Choose now!” Edward seemed to have become agitated, because he knew, the longer this dragged on, the faster the troops would arrive. “I'll count to three! One!”

Am I certain? Ouyang Tao asked himself again. Should I really do this? If it went wrong, he would regret this for the rest of his life.

“Two!” The sharp blade had already slashed the skin on Tia’s neck and blood trickled down. Tia closed her eyes, feeling as if that it was the countdown to the end of her life.

With little time left, Ouyang Tao steeled his heart and made his decision.

“Three!” As Edward said that, he put strength in the sword in his hand and prepared to cut off Tia’s head. At that instant, the energy bullet of the “Electrical.Longbow” was obviously faster, hitting the sword out of Edward’s right hand, saving Tia from danger.

The other “Electrical.Longbow” in the sky fired off as well, accurately hitting Lucifer’s crown.

Strength left Edward as soon as the Lucifer’s crown was hit, and Ouyang Xue who was in his left hand fell to the ground. His hands held his head tightly, as he backed away. “No..... NOOO..... IT SHOULDN’T BE LIKE THIS..... NOOOOOO —— !”

However, at this time, something abnormal happened to the relic. The magic seemed to have escaped after the relic was damaged and it backlashed at the user.

A sea of flame soon engulfed Edward and he let out howls of desperation: “AHHHH —— ! So hot! Save me! Save me! I don’t want to dieeeeeeee —— !”

“Edward —— !” Ouyang Tao wanted to rush to save him but was stopped by Tia.

“Are you crazy! Those are magical flames, you will die with him!”

“I can’t do nothing about it!”

In this dangerous time, magic pierced through space and shot from the empty sky. The instant Edward was shot, all the flames extinguished and Edward was

separated from Lucifer's Crown.

"Edward!" Ouyang Tao immediately ran to verify his condition "Great, you're alright..... That's great....."

Then, Tia picked up the Lucifer's Crown on the side — — It looked like a normal red metal headband and magic could not be felt from it.

Tia was suddenly curious, could such a thing really be the legendary Demon King Relic?

"Aish..... That's an imitation....." In her confusion, a deep low voice was suddenly heard. Tia turned and saw a man in black shirt, standing three to four steps away from her, who shook his head regretfully.

"What did you....." Before she had finished talking, the Lucifer's Crown in her hand shattered — — Just as the man in black shirt has said, it was not a real Demon King Relic.

"Although I do not know who you are, I thank you for saving my friend." Ouyang Tao did not think too much and just simply thanked the man.

The man in black shirt did not follow Ouyang Tao's conversation and just looked at Ouyang Tao's left hand: "However, the one in your hand is the real thing."

"What real thing? And, who are you?" Ouyang Tao pursed in questioning him.

"My identity is of no good use to you. It's best you two treat it as you haven't seen me before." The man in black shirt said as he turned around. A spatial magical array appeared and a classical horse carriage pulled by four horses appeared from the middle of it.

The black horse was exceptionally strong. Its whole body had muscles that were well-defined like an obsidian and its hooves were filled with cracks from lava — — This was not just any ordinary horse, it was a magical horse from hell.

The design of the carriage was also abnormal. The body of the carriage was made of a special element from hell, using a special kind of craftsmanship that had already been lost in time. Its physical defence was not below a sturdy fortress that was blessed with enchantments.

The man boarded the carriage: "Farewell."

Then, followed with a neigh, the horses soon disappeared back into the spatial magical array. It was as though it had not even appeared at all.

Following Edward's defeat, the frightening attacks on students finally came to a conclusion.

Several days later, at the checkpoint outside Augustus Academy, a magical stone powered car stopped there — — It was the car that was supposed to escort Edward to the borders.

Due to Edward being a member of the Archduke's family, coupled with Ouyang Tao's strong defence for him, claiming that he was only under the influence of the fake Demon King's relic, it saved Edward from a jail sentence.

However, Edward's punishment was still quite severe — — He was disowned as a member of the archduke's family, demoted to a peasant and exiled to a bordering town to become a small official, unable to return to the capital forever.

Edward did not complain and accepted calmly. To him, not being a member of the great archduke's family might not be a bad thing.

"Don't be sad for me..... This is what I deserved....." Edward wore casual clothes, pulled his luggage and his weak laughter was filled with apology, "Furthermore, this might not be a bad thing. Finally..... I can do whatever I want *Cough cough*....."

"No need to say anything, no matter what, I still treat you as a friend and

senior.” Ouyang Tao who had come to see him off hugged him tightly, “Keep in touch.”

“Of course.” After the two separated, Edward nodded, “Help me apologise to your sister.”

Ouyang Xue had not come to send Edward off. To Edward, he no longer had the conscience to see Ouyang Xue.

“I did not tell Ah Xue anything, in her heart, you are still the same kind senior.”

“Hehe, thank you, goodbye.”

As he finished, Edward boarded the car and left. Ouyang Tao watched as they left, only until the car completely disappeared from sight did he slowly turn around and leave.

Another person also came to send him off. That person was Tia. However, her real motive was to take the opportunity to ask Ouyang Tao a question that was bugging her the past few days: “Why did you choose to save me?”

“Because.....” Because Ouyang Tao believed Edward. He bet on the fact that he would not harm Ouyang Xue. However, he did not really want to explain that and just habitually revealed his silly laughter: “Heh heh, want to guess?”

Although Tia wanted to know the answer badly, seeing Ouyang Tao’s face that did not seem to care, there was suddenly an unfounded anger in her: “I can’t be bothered to guess.....”

“Anyway, why did you come send him off?”

Hearing this, Tia felt the urge to give Ouyang Tao a punch. Luckily, her noble lady teachings prevented her from doing it. She replied him with a question: “You can guess.”

However, Ouyang Tao seemed to pay no attention to it: “Heh heh, it does not matter to me.”

This brat..... Anger was rising in Tia and she even clenched her fist. However, after a deep breath, she managed to relax: “No matter what, I owe you one.”

“Oh, how do you want to repay that?”

“You..... How do you want me to repay that?”

Ouyang Tao had just asked casually, not expecting Tia to become nervous again.

“No idea, you can owe me first.” Ouyang Tao replied casually.

“Humph..... But let me say first, don’t expect me to let you win in a scoring match. That’s not possible.” As she spoke, she whistled out loud and her private horse galloped over from a distance. The young lady rode it with experience.

“Can’t you bring me along?”

“Fat chance. Go back yourself.” As Tia spoke, she whipped her horse, pulling away from Ouyang Tao.

Ouyang Tao smiled bitterly and shook his head. He slowly made his way back to the Academy.

What should I do next?

Go back to the dormitory to experiment?

Go to the library to read?

Ouyang Tao thought it through and decided to go accompany his sister.

Chapter 50

Volume 1 Epilogue

To Ouyang Tao, the assault incident had already come to a close but to his instructor, Lu Yun, everything had only just begun.

Due to the fact that the culprit was successfully caught in the end, Augustus Academy granted Lu Yun a position as one of the members of the council but he rejected it. His reason was that he did not do much in the capture of the culprit this time and would be ashamed to accept the position.

Lu Yun knew that the council was not a suitable place for a researcher like him. The power struggle was complicated and would make him lose focus. Furthermore status of a council member would bind him tightly, and not allow him to concentrate on what was important.

However, as replacement, he applied to form a dedicated research team that was focused on researching the fake Lucifer's Crown. Also he wanted to lead the team.

This request was quickly accepted by the council and they even paid a lot of attention to it. The council granted Lu Yun full authority over the matter under the condition that he kept the matter in full secrecy. He could recruit anyone in the Academy that he found useful — recreating divine relics was also a part of the lost technologies.

After Lu Yun teacher's Lin Shixiong left the school, research regarding the lost technologies had come to a halt. Now a slightly more successful product appeared. If he researched it, he might be able to make some breakthroughs.

However, rather than say they paid attention to him, it would be more accurate to say that the Academy was under heavy pressure from the Archduke's side.

Since someone was able to create a finished product, it meant that the someone had exceeded the progress of the Principality of Ryan. If there was a first, there would be a second or third product.....

Furthermore, if one could recreate Lucifer's Crown, the remaining relics: Baraqiel's armour, Beelzebub's shield, Asmodeus's spear, Leviathan's staff, Samael's boots and Mammon's gloves would also be able to be recreated.

Furthermore, if these imitations were mass produced, and even used as equipment for an army, the power of the army would be terrifying and in this world, no one would be able to stop such a force.

Therefore, research regarding the lost technology was an imminent emergency that needed to be broken through immediately.

The shards of Lucifer's Crown had all been sent to Augustus Academy's underground research facility and were delivered to various departments for treatment and analysis.

Lu Yun examined a shard under a microscope inside a sealed transparent box.

"This....." Although this was only a routine check, Lu Yun made a shocking discovery. There was a special engraving on the inner rim of the crown — An inverted cross. "Could it be..... The rebellious Inverted Cross Army?!"

The organisation that used to be called the Sacred Cross Army were the main attacking force who fought against the deities. They possessed strong sacred light magic and secret techniques. They were the elites of human beings.

However, after the great battle, the hot blooded soldiers lost their direction in life, or we could say, they lost their purpose of existence.....

Many people felt that they had been drowned in the long river of history. Until one day, they returned with the stance of demons.....

Lu Yun understood that this was no trivial matter and immediately dropped all his work: “Inform the council, I have an urgent matter to report!”

Chapter 51

Volume 2 Prologue

Deep into the night, Lu Yun's office lights were still lit. He was still tirelessly flipping through a report in his hands — It was a report of the battle done by Ouyang Tao.

The report was very detailed, and there were points that were worth researching. Lu Yun's eyes never left the report in his hand as his other hand habitually lifted the cup of coffee to his mouth; "Eh, I've finished it?"

Looking at the time, it was already 3a.m. Ever since he had become a professor, Lu Yun had never pulled such a late nighter in a long time.

The school's council were very cautious about the matter regarding the inverted cross army. However, this matter already was beyond the school's area of jurisdiction. Therefore, the school council commanded Lu Yun to stop pursuing this matter and concentrate on his research on the Lucifer's Crown replica.

Lu Yun was unsatisfied at this decision. The inverted cross army was a publicly recognised terrorist group, and Augustus Academy was a military school. Concerning such groups, the academy should have the special authority to take some form of action. Therefore, how could he just forget about this matter.

Furthermore, to Lu Yun, research was his actual speciality of work. Ouyang Tao's battle report further piqued his interest.

The report not only talked about how the battle went, it also included the modifications Ouyang Tao made to his weapons, how he used them and ideas for

further improvements.

Obviously, Ouyang Tao gained a lot of inspiration from this battle. One of his ideas was that they should not build the machine and the weapon separately and instead just use the weapon by itself.

Other than that, he also suggested to specialise the controls of machines and to adopt an army style of battle. This was completely opposite of the current way people use Mechanical Engineering Magic.

Currently, people focus on making it easy for general use and further modifications. It was acceptable as long as each weapon was capable of practical use. Each weapon would also be classified based on its abilities and power.

However, Ouyang Tao felt that it shouldn't be the case. He felt that the weapons should be separated based on their functions and uses. Each weapon and machine should focus solely on one function, and different weapons should be mixed around and used in battle.

To other professors, such a train of thought might be too advanced and some might even treat it as being rebellious. Lu Yun however did not see it this way as twenty years ago, he had already seen something similar.

As he thought about it, he decided to confirm his speculations.

Lu Yun stood up and opened a safe. From inside he removed a small metal box. Opening the box, what laid inside were documents that have already turned yellow with age — — These were all left behind by Lu Yun's teacher. The remaining few works of Professor Lin Shixiong that had not yet been destroyed.

However, Lin Shixiong had not disclosed all this to the public. That was due to the fact that the foundation of all this laid in the powerful lost technologies. Therefore, before research in the lost technologies was advanced enough, all of this would not be brought to its full potential.

Regarding the related technology, Lin Shixiong did not wish to continue its

research — — The further he went into its research, the more he realised that such technology was too powerful and that once it was successfully recovered, it would no doubt be used for war and destruction.

Of course, if someone found out that Lu Yun hid such documents, he would no doubt be interrogated.

Even though he knew that each professor's desk was planted with cameras and listening devices, Lu Yun still took out the documents to compare with Ouyang Tao's battle report.

All of Lin Shixiong's works were written in code and riddles. The one Lu Yun held in his hand was filled with weird symbols. There were not words on it. Other than Lu Yun, no one else could understand it.

After diligently comparing the two, Lu Yun found that the two documents were similar, extremely similar. The core theories and viewpoint could even be said to be exactly the same.

Was this a coincidence?

Lu Yun started to become more and more interested in Ouyang Tao.

Chapter 52

Volume 2 Chapter 1

Chapter 1: Heh, do you have a target?

Half a month after the freshmen entered school, the school's training and lessons had finally completely started.

Elements was one of the biggest departments in the Augustus Academy, with up to one third of the entire cohort belonging to that department. This was not only because Elements was the most common and generally used form of magic, it was also because Elements Magic was the most important form of support in battle.

Because a Mechanical Engineering Magician was a battle magician, they easily become the target of enemy attacks. Being in charge of front line attacks, they need others to provide protection for them so they could perform their tasks properly.

As a magician, only training one's magic abilities was insufficient. In order to get used to a battle environment, a magician's physical abilities was also very important. Therefore, every morning when the alarm rings at six, Ouyang Xue wakes up immediately and washes up quickly before putting on her uniform and joined the gathering below her dormitory in a squad formation.

"Everyone, right turn! Quick jog, go!"

Morning physical training was the start of a day's training for students belonging to the seven common departments. First was five kilometres of cross country run followed by four hundred metres of obstacles. After that comes

push-ups, sit-ups, pull-ups, mountain-climbers and other forms of static exercises — These will all continue from 6.30 a.m. to 8.30 a.m.

After training, the students return to their rooms to wash up again and eat breakfast before gathering at the lesson building or the training ground for their lessons.

Although the activities in the morning was more hectic, Augustus Academy provides free time in the afternoon for the students to choose what they want to do. They could choose to attend supplementary classes or public classes or join interest groups.

Competition within the Academy was stiff and the number of matches between students of the seven common departments were more frequent as compared to students of the three special departments. In the common departments, students ballot every week to choose who they face in the matches. Every week they fight against another student from the same grade and every fortnight, they face off in a guidance match against a senior. There were also sparring matches each month against students from other departments.

The purpose of all this was to ensure that students get used to battles as quickly as possible so as to prepare them for any real battles in the future.

To a freshman like Ouyang Xue, a normal match was extremely stressful as she feels the vast difference in skill between a commoner student and a student from a noble family.

For a noble family's child, they received the most proper, systematic and focused training since they were young. They solely focus on training only one or two elements, therefore, for the same type of magic, these students were able to use it more quickly and efficiently, bringing out a larger impact. Also, they have more experience in matches, which allow them to take the initiative in matches.

In comparison, Ouyang Xue found her magic to be inefficient with several details unsystematic. Coupled with her lack of experience, she was very

disadvantageous in battle.

Including the guidance match when she first entered school, Ouyang Xue had already participated in four graded matches. Her overall results were one lost, two wins and a draw. This was already considered one of the better results. However, she dared not to let her guard down as she wanted to protect the lead that she had. Hence, she practiced hard every day.

Therefore, every afternoon, she would go to the practice arena to train.

Actually, other than the three special departments, among the seven other common departments in Augustus Academy, around forty percent of the students were commoners. All of them also felt the pressure coming from the students from noble families. Not wanting to lag behind those students, they practiced doubly hard in order to reduce this gap.

For the past half a month, Ouyang Xue had meet several other girls at the practice arena with the same objective.

Today, Ouyang Xue was going to train as usual with her companions at the open-air training arena.

Halfway through training, everyone would sit on the chairs in the resting area to drink water and chat. Suddenly, a figure caught the attention of everyone — It was Ouyang Xue's beloved brother Ouyang Tao.

Due to his efforts in the assault incident last time, the academy had openly praised Ouyang Tao. Furthermore, he was the first commoner student accepted into Mechanical Engineering in fifty years. In an instant, he became the idol of most of the commoner students in school.

"Eh eh, Ouyang Xue, isn't that your brother?"

"Yeah, I remember seeing you guys together previously."

"Your bro is from Mechanical Engineering right?"

Everyone surrounded Ouyang Xue in an instant and started gossiping about it.

Her brother became the topic of the academy. Usually, Ouyang Xue would be very proud of this, however, now, this situation made her unhappy and she even became cautious: “What..... What do you guys want?”

“Do you have a target for the group already?”

“You siblings are definitely grouping together right? Let me tag along.”

“Me too, me too! Sister Xue, bring me along. Pleaseeee.”

Everyone’s tone sounded different, making Ouyang Xue confused and nervous: “Wait! What are you guys talking about!”

“Forming battle groups?”

“Yeah, we must form a battle group and hand in the namelist by mid-term.”

“What’s that?”

During the frequent dialogue sessions between the Mechanical Engineering students, Ouyang Tao had already heard about it.

After the first guidance match, Ouyang Tao abilities were recognised by the rest. This also reduced the estrangement between Ouyang Tao and his peers, allowing them to strike a conversation.

“Find people from the same grade as you and form small groups for battle. The minimum size is five with no maximum number of members. This is because in the later stages, many topics use group battles as the main form of assessment.” One of the students explained to Ouyang Tao briefly.

This was also not difficult to comprehend as Mechanical Engineering Magicians

are the core of battles. They were not omnipotent and require the aid of magicians from other departments.

In actual war, battle groups are the main battle units of the Principality of Ryan. In schools, the groups would have already been confirmed and after training for long together, they are able to prepare for actual battles and missions in the future. This also provides ease for the school to collect data on the characteristics of each group so as to allocate them to specific missions next time.

In conclusion, the groups are very important.

Hearing this, Ouyang Tao became nervous. Throughout his time in school, Ouyang Tao spent most of his time in the dormitory, the library and the training arena. He did not interact much with others and only know a few seniors in school.

That's why, he basically did not have anyone to group up with!

Suddenly, Ouyang Tao had an idea: "How about the five of us form a group?"

However, his expectations were smashed quickly: "Don't even think about it. Each group can only have a maximum of two Mechanical Engineering members. Furthermore, students within Mechanical Engineering don't usually form groups together."

"Then..... You guys already have an idea who to group up with?" Ouyang Tao asked inquisitively.

"Nope, but why worry."

"That's right, we are from Mechanical Engineering. There's no need to worry."

Although the few other noble students also did not have any other members, they all replied naturally. It was as if they did not care about it at all.

This, Ouyang Tao had to ask: “Why are you guys not even concerned?”

“We students from Mechanical Engineering are loved and favoured. Don’t worry, when the time comes, students from other departments will come looking for you to group up. You only have to choose who you like.”

“That’s right, choose the core members of your group wisely, just pick a couple of pretty girls to fill up the numbers and ‘advance’ on them. Anyway, we would definitely get members.”

“Speaking of which, this year, Elements and Nature department has several pretty girls.”

“Spirits and Medicine department isn’t bad as well.”

“Well these few departments specialise in pretty girls.”

“Magical Swordsmanship and Feral Beasts department aren’t bad actually, except they are too wild. They are a bit more than what we can chew.”

The topic unknowingly diverted to such a weird direction. Ouyang Tao was not interested and did not participate.

Forming a group was a simple task, but the coordination and trust between the members was important. However, what was most important was having a good leader to direct the members.

Ouyang Tao also knew, being members of the noble families, all the other students had received proper training in battle and tactics since young. Since Mechanical Engineering Magicians are the core of battle, the others also knew how such battles worked and how the others magicians complemented the Mechanical Engineering Magician. However, in this aspect, Ouyang Tao knew nothing.

What to do.....

Chapter 53

Volume 2 Chapter 2

Chapter 2: Is this person even reliable?

The incident about forming teams weighed heavily on Ouyang Tao's mind. This was because the issue was very important. Ignoring the imminent battle, the grouping still affected the student's grades directly as many of the examinations that students take in the future are in the form of mock missions and sparring matches which are all carried out in groups. Failure would directly affect the group's results which might eventually lead to a situation where they do not have sufficient points to graduate.

Fortunately, the academy took precautions against this kind of situations. When new students form groups for the first time, they can temporarily apply to have two graduate students join their team for not more than a year to guide them along the way.

Other than that, each student was given a thick file that has the history and statistics of all the students in the same level. Ouyang Tao held the book in one hand thinking deeply as he made his way back to his dormitory.

As a battle group, the Mechanical Engineering Magician was naturally the core of the offense. Members from the Elements department are also necessary as they are second in terms of offensive capabilities.

It would have been even better if there were members from Spirits department, who specialised in investigation and scouting, and members from the feral beast department who were highly mobile.

Furthermore, members from the Nature department were also sought after for their strong defensive capabilities. Members from the Medicine department were also necessary to provide all sorts of support.

If they were facing matters/missions related to Magical Artifact and Divine Beasts, the strength of members from the Heavenly Magic and Illusions department were definitely necessary.....

Also, it would be best to have someone from the Magical Swordsmanship Department as they were the most well rounded and strong warriors.

Judging from the situation, Ouyang Tao would need to have at least ten members on his team.

The fact that one could enter Augustus Academy would mean that they were not mediocre. From the file, each student had their own talents and specialities. Generally, everyone looked good.

If what the other Mechanical Engineering students had said were true, students from other departments would proactively look for them.....

“AIYO!”

“AH? Shit!”

Walking and reading at the same time was a bad habit. Obviously, Ouyang Tao had knocked into someone and judging from the impact and noise from the collision, it seemed to be a petite female.

Ouyang Tao anxiously closed the thick file in his hands, only to see a short-hair girl whom he had knocked to the ground. The papers that she held in her hand were scattered all around. Ouyang Tao frantically apologised: “Sorry, are you ok?”

“Ahh, my data!” In the eyes of the girl, the scattered paper were obviously more important as she immediately knelt down and began collecting and picking

up all the scattered paper.

Feeling guilty, Ouyang Tao immediately bent down and began helping her retrieve the scattered paper; “My apologies, let me help you pick them up.”

After keeping her things properly, the girl slowly stood up. Ouyang Tao took the chance to apologise again: “I’m sorry, I did not look where I was going just now. So sorry.”

“It’s alright, I wasn’t paying attention either. I should have held a lighter load.....”

Finally looking at each other face to face, they realised that they had been acquainted before and weren’t strangers.

“EH? You are.....”

“AH? IT’S YOU?!”

Large square spectacles, rather short and skinny..... At one glance, Ouyang Tao recognised that it was the senior who had shown him around when he first entered school.

Instead of wearing a suit, she was wearing a girl’s uniform(Long skirt style).

She’s actually a girl — — Ouyang Tao nearly said that out loud.

“You’re Ouyang Tao right! The commoner Mechanical Engineering student.”

“Yeah, I also remember you. You’re the senior that brought me around when I was just admitted.”

Previously, Ouyang Tao had thought that the Senior who had initially brought him around was really too gentle to be a guy. Different from the weakness Edward showed, hers was complete gentleness, coupled with a ‘Doll-like Face’

and watery eyes. She gave off a feeling that she would cry with some slight teasing. (TL: That made Ouyang Tao think that she was a guy.)

However, the fact that she was a girl would make his initial thoughts understandable. Those puppy eyes seemed to give off a “Please Protect Me”, “Don’t Bully Me” signal, making people want to caress her.

Just like now.....

“Ugh. Actually I already..... Senior..... Because my score wasn’t enough..... Repeated a grade..... I worked so hard..... I clearly worked so hard.....” As she spoke, she started to sob.

Although repeating grades was a terrible thing and crying was unavoidable, crying like that in front of Ouyang Tao in public would make it seem as though Ouyang Tao did something to her. It would definitely bring serious negative repercussions to him.

“Oi, don’t cry. People would think that I bullied you.”

“Sorr..... Sorry..... But..... Score..... Retaining Grades..... UUUWWAAAAAA — — !”

In the end, he could not stop her as the young girl started crying.

After which, just as Ouyang Tao had predicted, the surrounding people all turned and looked. Ouyang Tao could not even think about defending himself.

However, what was worse was.....

“BRO!” Ouyang Tao suddenly heard a shout from behind him and the voice was obviously filled with rage. Turning around, it was indeed Ouyang Xue. With a look of righteousness, she exclaimed: “What are you doing — — ! I never expected you to be such a person!”

Ouyang Tao completely gave up defending himself: “Please, Ah Xue, don’t add fuel to the fire.....”

Half an hour later, in one of the middle-class cafes where they had to pay, the Ouyang Siblings and the spectacled girl sat together at a window side table. In front of them sat the cheapest spaghetti set meal.

“Let me introduce myself again. I’m Annie, Medicine department, first year. I should have been a second year.....” As she spoke, her voice became softer and she drooped her head. Only a slight buzzing sound could be heard when she had finished speaking.....

Ouyang Tao could not take it if the situation went out of control again and immediately consoled her: “Let’s not speak about sad stuff and eat first.”

“Ugh.....” Annie nodded, trying to compose her feeling before continuing: “I’m..... I’m sorry about just now. Let me pay for this meal as an apology. Although, I don’t have much money left..... I still need it for new medicine..... Several debts I have not collected yet.....”

“No no, don’t worry. Let me pay for this meal.” Seeing the situation starting to go out of hand, Ouyang Tao consoled her yet again.

Until now, Ouyang Tao could roughly understand why Annie repeated grades — Her personality would obviously hold people back. Why would anyone let her join their team.

“Hush Annie. Don’t Cry Annie..... The meal is nice. Come~ Eat! Say ‘Ah~’.”

“Ah~”

Then, Ouyang Tao saw his sister feeding Annie which made him feel how unreliable this girl was.

However, Ouyang Tao was curious: “Ah Xue, do you know her?”

“That’s right. She lives in the room just across from mine.” As Ouyang Xue spoke, she continued feeding Annie. Annie was finally revealing a delightful smile from the great tasting meal.

“Bro do you know, Annie is excellent at making medicine. Last time in the sparring match, when I got injured, Annie applied some medication and I was healed instantly.”

“Oh... Is it.....” Ouyang Tao said as he secretly flipped his file to Annie’s profile.

Annie’s battle capabilities, defense capabilities and adaptability were all zero. However her magical strength was almost one hundred and twenty thousand units. That was nearly five times of Ouyang Tao. Also, her Medical and Extraction ability was nearly god-like. She received a rare grade S and she specialised in Emergency Rescue.

Seeing this, Ouyang Tao raised his head to look at Annie who was snuggling up like a cat beside his sister — — In theory, this was supposed to be a very effective skill. But looking at how Annie was..... Ouyang Tao shook his head. There’s no way it would work.

“Ah, that’s right. Ouyang Xue, is your brother’s group formed up yet?” Annie asked as if suddenly remembering something. She pounced up for Ouyang Xue’s side and leaned forward, nearly jumping onto the table.

Actually, Ouyang Xue had the same question in mind: “That’s right. Bro, have you decided on your team yet?”

“This.....” Ouyang Tao had an ominous feeling and he smiled awkwardly, replying: “Not yet, I had only just received news of this.”

“Then this is just perfect, let us form a team together Bro. Annie is very useful.”

“En en, Pleaseee.”

Coming out from his sister’s mouth, Ouyang Tao found it hard to reject.....

Chapter 54

Volume 2 Chapter 3

Chapter 3: Where did I go wrong?

Just like what the other Mechanical Engineering Students had previously said, they need not worry about forming teams. Being the core of offense, Mechanical Engineering Magicians were crucial in carrying out different missions. Naturally, other students would proactively look for them to form teams.

However, other than Mechanical Engineering Department, another department's students also did not have to worry — and that was the Medicines Department.

The saying goes “Food and fodder goes before the troops and horses”. The pharmacist of the Medicines department, although lacked offensive powers, are able to produce all kinds of medicines and scrolls which can boost the abilities of the Battle Magicians and also further support them.

For example, during a mission, students need to bring along half a month worth of rations. Pharmacist however are able to create a small vial of potion which can be used as substitute for one day worth of ration thereby prolonging their ability to stay in the field during missions. Using the potions, they can stay in the field for as long as two months as compared to two weeks while using rations.

If someone had gotten injured and required emergency treatment, the Pharmacist's special created medical lotion is able to speed up recovery of light injuries as well as control the damage done by severe injuries. In the most critical of situations, they are able to protect the lives of their comrades in critical conditions.

Other than that, when being poisoned, short term supplements and different types of scrolls are all able to provide support for teammates during battle — — therefore, to most battle teams, Pharmacist are a crucial part of the team. Their importance was no less than a Mechanical Engineering Magician.

That's why a Pharmacist was so important and even if it was his sister's request, he could not agree so easily.

However, from another point of view, if Annie were really as talented as what the files had written, all of her other inabilities could be ignored. Therefore, Ouyang Tao came up with the condition that if Annie were to really join his team, she needed to show what she was capable of.

"Ummm..... If that were the case, I would make an exception and allow you two to see my laboratory." After finishing her dinner, she brought the Ouyang siblings to her laboratory.

The Medicines department had their own dedicated building for experiments. Inside it were several large scale general laboratories and each student even had their own independent laboratory.

Just like within the Mechanical Engineering department, each Pharmacist's ability and concoction recipes was kept secret from one another. Therefore, the individual laboratory were usually prohibited from outsiders.

Needless to say, Annie must have put in a lot of consideration that she brought the Ouyang siblings in.

Opening the two doors and entering the laboratory, an odd pungent medicinal smell filled the air. The Ouyang siblings covered their nose immediately.

"My apologies, the smell is a bit strong. I'll turn on the ventilation fan immediately." Annie quickly turned on the ventilation fan and after a while, the Ouyang siblings hesitantly walked into the laboratory.

After entering, what caught their eyes immediately were the shelves and shelves of medicines and materials that were classified neatly. Following Annie around the maze of shelves, they arrived at a workstation about ten metres away. The workstation was similarly filled with medications.

Beside the workstation was two huge and locked metal cabinet and one transparent cage that kept several animal specimens for experiments. From the labels on the metal cabinets, it could be seen that one stored various experimental data and results while the other stored completed products.

Then, Annie suddenly turned around and bowed at the Ouyang siblings: “My dear customers, welcome to my little shop. Please advice on what you require.”

“Ah?” Ouyang Xue did not understand her intention.

“What are you saying?” Ouyang Tao was similarly clueless.

Annie seemed to also realised that something was wrong: “Oh? Ahhh! Sorry sorry! It’s just a habit. Hehe...”

Despite what she said, the phrase before showed what she was clearly doing. Ouyang Tao asked uncontrollably: “You..... Can’t be doing some business all this while?”

“Well..... How should I put it? Pharmacists collecting orders of some sort is unavoidable. Each month, the ingredients they give us is so little. How could it be enough? Furthermore, all the rare herbs are very expensive.”

“Okay..... I can accept your explanation.....” What Ouyang Tao cared the most now was whether Annie really possessed the ability of a top class pharmacist.

“Then, as a pharmacist can you show us some of your achievements?”

“Ugh..... Let me see.....” Annie said, opening her storage cabinet. Soon, she removed a small bag. “This is it. Do you want to try it?”

That was a bag of flowery and green sweets. It was specially made in the shape of a bear. Ouyang Tao helplessly replied: “Thank You, but I had just eaten, I’m not hungry.”

“That’s not what I meant. This is a special energy sweet that I created. It is filled with a person’s required daily energy intake. As long you bring along a bag of it, you don’t have to worry about being hungry for a few months~” Annie stuck out her chest and said with confidence.

Hearing what Annie said, Ouyang Tao became curious. He picked up one and examined it — It looks like any normal candy and he dared not believe completely her: “Is it really so good?”

“Of course!”

Even though Annie swore of its properties, Ouyang Tao still felt that it was a little exaggerating: “However, this candy, there is no way to prove it..... Is there anything that we can see the effect immediately?”

“Immediately see the effects..... Let me see.....” As she spoke, she turned around and searched her storage cabinet for a while. Eventually, she took out a vial with a coffee coloured gooey potion. “This is my rapid healing medicine. As long as you are injured by normal weapons and magic, this potion can heal you rapidly.”

“This.....” Ouyang Tao felt that this was worth a try, but he purposely made things difficult for her, “This kind of medicine can be made by any Pharmacist, there’s nothing really special about it.”

“Of course this is special! Let me show you!” She then put on her white robe and wore her white gloves and mask. Then she grabbed a rabbit from the transparent cage and placed it on the dissection board (Similar to a cutting board but used for dissection).“

“Don’t look.” Ouyang Tao roughly guessed what Annie wanted to do and covered his sister’s eyes hastily.

Just as Ouyang Tao had imagined, the next scene was very bloody. After cutting up the rabbit, she removed the rabbit's heart and other important organs — In theory, the rabbit had already died.

“Look closely. It's time for a miracle~” As she spoke, Annie took the rapid healing medicine and applied it into the open wound and poured a bit of it inside the rabbit. What happened next was just like Annie said, a miracle.

The rabbit's organs quickly regenerated and the wounds recovered quickly. Soon, the rabbit was back to life.

This really works ?! That's incredible! Ouyang Tao was finally impressed this time.

“However, the ingredients for this medicine is very expensive. I've only made five bottles and have sold three of them already. However, there is a less potent formula which is also very powerful.”

“How powerful?”

“As long as the heart, organs and brain did not receive and fatal injuries, the medication would be able to heal you. However it takes a longer time. About one to two hours.”

“That's alright. It's already very strong like that.”

As he said that, Ouyang Tao started to feel that something was weird. Although it was true that Annie did not have any offense power, just based of her medicines, it might not be sought after, but there was no reason why nobody wanted to form a team with her.

Even if her offensive capabilities and physical condition was very bad, if an armour or some form of movement bot was created for her, there was no way she would pull the team down so much that no one wanted her.

In the end, Ouyang Tao accidentally stepped on Annie's landmine: “Annie,

since you are so good, why did you repeat grades?”

“That..... That is because..... Because.....” As expected, at the mention of this matter, Annie began to sob again “Because Annie’s medicine wouldn’t function properly during battles. The previous time, it had almost killed seniors Monica and Chen Feng. Everyone calls me ‘the one who ate the wrong medicine’, therefore..... therefore..... Wuuuuwahhhh —— !”

“Okay Annie, don’t cry, don’t cry.” Ouyang Xue anxiously hugged Annie and consoled her.

This made Ouyang Tao more and more confused.

As a researcher, when Ouyang Tao stepped into the laboratory, he felt that although Annie looked very blur and unreliable, when she was researching medicines, her attitude is very serious and careful. Such would definitely not make a low level mistake.

Then, just what went wrong with her medicine?

Volume 2 Chapter 3.5

Volume 2 Interval 1

Although Lu Yun had numerous issues that he had to handle, he was still very concerned about his student — — No matter it were his past or present student.

It was not weird that his old student looked for him for advice. As a professor, he wasn't stingy in giving advice. However, there were some things he still had to say: "Tia, your current professor is Professor Cologne. I don't think it's very nice for you to seek me out. You should ask him for his advice about your designs."

Despite what he said, Lu Yun still carefully looked at the report and design and gave out advice.

"Thank you Professor, I will make the changes according to your suggestions."

"You're welcome." Lu Yun smiled slightly. He knew that Tia had been working hard all along. However, since half a month ago, she had become even more hardworking and a little more stubborn. "Tia, are you still holding a grudge about the Newcomers guidance match?"

Tia replied directly without shunning from the topic: "I looked at the match very highly. But no, I do not bear any grudges. Honestly speaking, I'm seriously treating that fella as my rival."

This was not in a moment's anger. From the few interactions, she found Ouyang Tao's talent to be very shocking. The weapons he created were not just practical, they were also very creative. More importantly, the amount of time Ouyang Tao took to create new weapons was shockingly short.

During this period, Tia had been secretly observing Ouyang Tao, who had been going to the Weapon's Testing Arena each day. She realised that he brought a new weapon to test at an average of once every five days. With such a speed, it was as if he was creating something as soon as he had thought of it and that he succeeded as soon as he tried it.

Despite the actual situation being different from what Tia had saw, it still brought her a lot of pressure.

Although she felt that she was still far superior to him, she thought he was quickly chasing up to her while her progress was slow as a snail.

"Ugh..... Like that....." Lu Yun nodded as if he was deep in thought.

As a tutor, Lu Yun knew that Tia's worries were unnecessary because Ouyang Tao had only just started proper training. He was still accumulating experience and improving rapidly because of his talent and hardwork was natural.

Tia on the other hand already had vast experience and was already at another level compared to Ouyang Tao. Wanting to improve, she would naturally encounter numerous bottlenecks in training. Staying stagnant for a while was perfectly normal.

However, Lu Yun did not want to enlighten her. He felt that with Tia's character, as long as she believed in something, her belief would not be easily changed.

Furthermore, having a strong opponent was beneficial to both the growing Ouyang Tao and Tia who was trapped in a bottleneck. It provided a strong stimulation for the both of them. On one hand, this made Ouyang Tao not let down his guard too easily and keep working hard. On the other hand, it provided Tia with a suitable opponent so she would not be demoralised by not having an

opponent in the long run.

Also, for actual battles, Lu Yun felt that there was someone more suitable than Ouyang Tao.

“Anyway, you are going to have to bring teams this year. Have you chosen your group yet?” Lu Yun inquired.

Although graduate students did not need to form their own groups, they had to be in charge of one or two battle groups, guiding them in battle.

“Truthfully speaking..... I have received numerous invitations. However..... There isn't one I really like.” Tia was in Mechanical Engineering Department and was a veteran of battles. Therefore, she had received numerous applications since school started, as many had hoped to have a huge backing like her.

Previously during the Newcomer's welcome dinner. The main reason the first year Mechanical Engineering students crowded around her was probably this.

However, she had rejected most of their request outright, as she felt that many of them had improper intentions.

“Then, how about a great senior like you bring a new junior?”

“Who? Ahhh..... You mean him.....” Tia quickly understood who Lu Yun was referring to. It was probably Ouyang Tao.

“Why? Are you unwilling?”

“No..... “ Tia thought about it. If it were him, although it might not be pleasant working with him, at least it saves a lot of trouble. “Alright. Since professor has already said so, then let's just do it.”

Chapter 56

Volume 2 Chapter 4

Chapter 4 The young lady's problems

Finding a pharmacist at the start of forming a group was definitely a good thing (Annie's reliability still needs to be investigated), however, there was still a problem that was not solved — — who would be the group's leader.

The leader was the spiritual core of the team and also had to take care of the emotions and honor of the team. This was a huge responsibility. Ouyang Tao was clear that he did not possess the ability to lead the team — — at least not know.

There were only four graduate students that Ouyang Tao knew: Zhao Yuehan, Monica, Chen Feng and Tia.

Zhao Yuehan definitely couldn't do it. Although Monica was weird, she seemed like a decent choice and Chen Feng was also a dependable person. However, there would be some communication problems with Chen Feng. If it were Monica, there shouldn't be any problems.

As for Tia..... Ouyang Tao did not even think about it.....

After sending his sister back to her dormitory, Ouyang Tao thought about the problem as he made his way back to the dormitory.

Actually, it was only 8p.m. Most of the students were having their night activities at this time. The student recreations building and the social clubs centre were still brightly lit. Everyday, various activities were held there. It was used to boost the student's co-curricular life as well as provide them a platform

to socialise.

Obviously, Ouyang Tao was not a robot. Despite his profession and interest lying in researching with technology, he still needed a break from it. Everytime he walked past these two buildings, he would stop for a moment as he would always be tempted to go in and play.

However, every time he was about to enter, he would remember that he still had a lot of things to learn and many experiments to perform. Ouyang Tao would realise his lack of time..... In the end, he would leave and return to his dormitory to experiment.

Today was no exception. Once Ouyang Tao remembered that he was going to have another battle with Tia in half a month's time, his heart started to become nervous. He swiftly turned around, preparing to return to his dormitory.

“Miss Tia, are you really not going to stay for another dance?”

“No. Thanks for your great hospitality. It's a pity that I have another engagement tonight and can't stay any longer.”

Soon, Tia walked out of the student recreation center. She had plaited her long hair and wore a strapless black gown. Although she only had a winged-shaped diamond breastpin, it still looked elegant despite its simplicity. It looked as though she had just attended a ball.

Although the usual Tia was already an outstanding beauty, she looked even more noble and graceful with some slight make-up. The strapless dress added a sexy feel to her — It seemed that the phrase clothes make the man was definitely true.

Despite the male beside her trying his best to make her stay, Tia still rejected him strongly. She looked like she was rushing somewhere as her high heels clattered down the stairs and she run straight down.

“EH?” Soon, Tia realised Ouyang Tao staring at her at a distance away “What

are you doing here?”

“I.....” That’s right, why am I still standing here? Ouyang Tao did not even seem to understand but he knew that he could not say he was engrossed at staring at Tia “I wasn’t doing anything. I had just sent my sister home to her dormitory and was just passing by.”

Tia was not entirely convinced so she examined Ouyang Tao for a while before believing him: “That’s true. It does not look like you are here to attend the ball.”

Ouyang Tao was wearing his school uniform as usual, making it obvious that he was not here for the ball. Furthermore, he had a metal glove hanging at his waist that was very incompatible.

Although what she said was true, Ouyang Tao still felt a little hurt. At the very least, he was a member of the special departments in the academy but judging from what she said, it seemed as though he did not qualify to attend the party at all.

“Then, you go do your stuff, I’m going to return to my dormitory.” Ouyang Tao still felt that Tia was merely an acquaintance and was beyond his reach. After thinking it through, he decided to avoid her.

“Stop, I’m also returning to my dormitory.”

“Then just return? Didn’t you say that you had something to do?”

“That’s called social etiquette.”

“Ohh.....” Ouyang Tao scratched his head in confusion: “Then you just go your way, why stop me?”

This brat..... Every time she saw Ouyang Tao, especially when he gave off a silly expression, Tia always felt like beating him up: “Can we go together?”

“Sure. you should have said that from the start. I still thought you were riding back.”

“Look at what I’m wearing. How can I possibly ride? Use you brains!”

“Okay okay. That was my mistake. I was blind. Sorry.” Ouyang Tao did not know why but he felt that Tia’s temper was a little bit bigger today.

Since the other party already said to go back together, just bearing with it won’t make lose anything.

However, Ouyang Tao soon felt that something was wrong. Tia was wearing a gown at that time and he in comparison was dressed very normal. Standing beside her made him look a little shabby and when they walked together he stuck out like a sore thumb. This caught the attention of the students they passed along the way.

What was even more awkward was that Tia was sulking the whole way and did not speak at all.

As Ouyang Tao thought about it, he remembered that she was still feeling okay when she left the student recreation building.

Ouyang Tao really could not take it anymore and asked: “Miss Tia, it’s okay for you to drag me to follow you back. But at least say something! What are you sulking for?”

Tia glanced at Ouyang Tao before sighing deeply. Her face seemed to relax instantly and she said: “Aish..... It’s ok, you wouldn’t understand. Anyway, it doesn’t concern you.”

“Aish, I really don’t understand. You dressed up like this to attend the ball, wasn’t it suppose to help you relax?”

“That’s why I said you wouldn’t understand. Lucky fella.”

“Lucky? How am I lucky!” Hearing this made Ouyang Tao unhappy, “You really think I don’t want to find a chance to enjoy myself and relax a little? But my basics in creating machines and weapons aren’t even strong yet. How can I enjoy like you?”

In the end, after hearing what Ouyang Tao said, Tia also ranted back: “What do you mean ‘enjoy like me’, you say as if I wanted to go to the ball.”

“If you didn’t want, why did you go?”

“That’s why I said you wouldn’t understand.....” Tia helplessly shook her head, “You think that I can reject it?”

“What do you mean? You have to go even if you don’t want to?”

“That’s right. That ball was thrown by the son of one of my father important political affiliates, I had no choice but to go.”

Actually, Tia did not like socialising. All the relationships between the nobles was too complicating and the relationships superficial. They all hid their intentions and spoke with caution, hiding all of their most honest thoughts.

However, as the daughter of the current Prime Minister, and staying in an environment filled with nobles’ children, certain interactions were unavoidable.

If she could choose, she would rather spend her time in the laboratory.

However, Tia asking Ouyang Tao along was not to say all these: “Oh, how’s your battle group going along?”

“Not much progress, I have little clue in this field.”

“Your tutor, of course, also my previous tutor, Professor Lu Yun requested for me to join your group. However, the condition was that I will be your group’s leader.” Tia emphasised on the last point as she felt Ouyang Tao would definitely

not agree to it.

“Eh?? Really?” However, Ouyang Tao did not reject the idea at all and instead revealed a face of elation, “Are you really going to lead my group?? That’s great! Thank you so much!”

No objection nor was there any arguments. Ouyang Tao accepted the idea happily. This was completely unexpected to Tia. She thought that Ouyang Tao would argue with her ferociously and accepting it at the end without a choice.

“Eh? You..... You aren’t unhappy with this arrangement at all?”

“Why should I be unhappy?”

“No..... Why.....” Tia was speechless at this situation. This guy can’t be faking right? “Anyway, are you really okay with me being your leader?”

Ouyang Tao genuinely felt that it was a good thing: “Yeah, of course. I still have many points to learn from you. I also need to thank Professor Lu. He must have put in a lot of effort to convince you to guide me.”

“What do you mean?” Did this guy think that I’m petty all this while?

“Isn’t it true? You are the top student in the department. Obviously many people hope that you would join them. Professor Lu must have put in a lot of effort to convince you join guide me right?”

“Ummm..... Ahhhh, that’s right. You better show promise and not let down Professor Lu’s expectation.”

“Yup, of course.”

“Also.....” Tia thought for a moment and said “I will only be your leader, other than that, nothing else!”

“What else could there be?”

“Nothing.”

What’s wrong with her? Ouyang Tao felt outrageous. Since he met Tia, he felt that Tia was weird. He wondered what her problem was?

In reality, Tia was indeed worried about something. What she was worried about would never be imagined by Ouyang Tao.

It was marriage.

Chapter 57

Volume 2 Chapter 5

Chapter 5 : An unexpected meeting

Ouyang Tao could not comprehend the world of the nobles — at least not now.

Tia was already twenty one. Among the nobles, it was the age of marriage already. At the very least, her marriage need to be confirmed already.

She was beautiful and the sole daughter of the current prime minister. Just these two points brought her numerous suitors. However, guys that were chasing her just because of these two points were all looked down upon by her. She would rather be a old spinster than be married to someone who was only seeking wealth and beauty.

However, as Tia's father, Marquis Zha Kuyin did not think like this. Although he tried to respect Tia's personal choice as much as possible, he still treated her as a political chip for marriage and continuously arranged meetings for her with potential suitors.

Just like the ball today, the main purpose of it was to let Tia "meet" the noble's son. He was a member of the Magical Swordsmanship department. After a few greetings, Tia realised he was a typical guy that seek the influence of the Zha Kuyin family.

Because of that, Tia merely entertained him for a while before leaving promptly.

What made Tia sulk was that her father just promised her not long ago that he would not bother her with things regarding marriage before she completed her graduate studies. Although she knew this would only buy her some time, she refused to conform to the system.....

Alright, all this might be rubbish or possibly just an excuse.

The reason she kept pushing away marriage matters was simple — — she had already found someone she liked.

He was a member of the Magical Swordsmanship Department and was three years older than Tia. When Tia first entered school, he guided her along a lot and soon, they were secretly in love.

It was “secret” simply because that senior was a commoner.

That was why, after graduation, the senior did not seek graduate studies, and instead went to serve in the Magician’s army. They also agreed that when Tia completed her graduate studies, the senior would use his military achievements to seek marriage with Tia from her father.

From what Tia had heard, the senior was performing quite well in the Magician’s army and even acquired several achievements under his belt. If all went as planned, when Tia completes her graduate studies, she would be able to marry her loved one.

Her only regret was that the Magician’s army had strict discipline and most of the time they were battling outside the country. Therefore, she was unable to meet him most of the time. The last time she met her lover was half a year ago. To a young lady, this was undoubtedly a form of torture.

She just had to endure for another three years..... Tia told herself. If only she could, she would not wait even three days.

Full of such thoughts, the young lady returned to her dormitory. Not sure why, she felt very tired and did not care of any lady etiquette and jumped onto her

bed.

After lying down for a while, someone spoke in her room where there shouldn't have been anyone else: "You're still the same Tia. You'll get fat!"

"Who!" Tia was surprised and at the same time grabbed the long sword by her bedside. She swept behind her but it was caught by the other party with two fingers.

"Hehe, what a quick strike. You've improved a lot." The one that spoke was a blonde handsome young man dressed in the uniform of a high ranking officer in the Magician's Army. It made him look suave.

Tia stared with eyes wide open for quite a while to ensure that it reality and not her hallucinations. Her lethargy was instantly gone and replaced with elation. She threw her sword aside, before throwing herself into the man's arms: "Rem, I miss you so much!"

Even though the students of the three special departments did not have any morning lesson, Ouyang Tao still woke up punctually at 6 in the morning. He started his day with morning exercises. He practiced a form of ancient martial arts — he could not use Elements magic and therefore had to learn something different for self-defence.

Why he chose this was actually Monica's advice. She said that Chen Feng felt he had talent in martial arts. Therefore Chen Feng had decided to teach him a move each day.

In the backyard today, there was only Ouyang Tao. This was because Monica and Chen Feng were attached out on mission and would not return for a few days — Honestly speaking, him alone in the huge dormitory felt very lonely. Having the two seniors, especially Monica, made it much more lively.

However, Ouyang Tao was still in a good mood as his battle group was forming up well.

There was already a leader, a Pharmacist, an Elemental Magician and himself..... Ouyang Tao had not expected it to go so well, recruiting four people at once.

Although the pharmacist skill still needed observation and the leader's condition seemed weird, he believed that it was not a problem.

After finishing breakfast, Ouyang Tao prepared to go to the library. Then, he realised someone outside the fence of his backyard. She seemed to be waiting for someone.

Ouyang Tao opened up the fence and asked her: "Who are you looking for?"

"Hello, is Mechanical Engineering Department's Ouyang Tao here?" The person speaking was a long haired girl who appeared to be a member of Medicines department from her school crest.

Although it was the first time they met, Ouyang Tao first impression was that she a Lady from a noble family.

Unlike Tia's untouchable elegance, the girl who was called Liu Xinya gave off a more restrained and graceful demeanor. The smile on her face made her look more approachable and intimate.

"That's me, is something the matter?"

She took a step back and bowed slightly, before saying courteously: "Hello, I'm a pharmacist named Liu Xinya and I want to join your battle group."

There really was people who initiated to join. Ouyang Tao did not think that he would so easily gather five people, only.....

"Medicines Department? But..... I'm sorry, my team already has a pharmacist."

"I know, Annie right? She recommended me here."

“Oh? You know each other?”

“Of course, she’s my classmate. Annie specialised in medicines while I specialised in scrolls.”

“Scrolls.....” Ouyang Tao said and took out the thick file to look for her name.”

“No need to look at those.” Liu Xinya put her hand gently on the file, “Because I was on sick leave for one period, therefore, the information recorded is not reflective of my current skill.”

“On leave..... No wonder.” Ouyang Tao nodded as if deep in thought. Logically speaking, she was Annie’s classmate and should be in her second year too. If she wanted to look for a group, why would she proactively look for him? “However, the group isn’t confirmed yet, can you let me consider for a bit? Is it alright if I’ll contact you through Annie next time?”

“Sure. I’ll wait for your good news.” As she spoke, Liu Xinya bowed towards Ouyang Tao again before leaving. Her every actions, every expression gave off a very graceful beauty, giving out a strong impression.

However, Ouyang Tao kept feeling that there was something weird.....

That’s right! Her eyes!

Ouyang Tao felt that the young lady’s eyes were a little weird. She was either staring at his eyes or avoid his line of sight.

Could it be his imagination?

Chapter 58

Volume 2 Chapter 6

Chapter 6: Are you forming a team or a royal harem?

The library was the same as always, empty and silent. Other than the girl sitting at the counter and Ouyang Tao, there was no third person.

The book that he had failed to complete yesterday still laid open on the table. The notes that he had taken laid there neatly as well. The notes had also been specially stapled together — this was obviously Zhao Yuehan's doing.

Going to the library to read every morning had already become an important part of Ouyang Tao's life. It was not only because there were still a lot of things left to read, but more importantly, it was to thank his saviour for saving him.

Ouyang Tao walked over and greeted courteously: "Good morning senior."

Zhao Yuehan looked up and replied simply: "Morning."

However, there was something slightly different from usual. Zhao Yuehan did not continue reading immediately nor did she ask Ouyang Tao whether he needed anything. She just continued staring at Ouyang Tao.

"Ehh?" Being stared like that by Zhao Yuehan, Ouyang Tao could not tell what's wrong. He hastily looked at himself from top to bottom "Is..... Is something wrong with me?"

"The power of jealousy."

“What?”

“Disappeared..... My mistake.” After finishing, Zhao Yuehan lowered her head and continued reading like usual.

If it were someone else, Ouyang Tao would probably just treat it as a mistake. However, Zhao Yuehan’s instincts were very sharp. If she observed something, it must be correct. The incident before was a good example.

However, if Zhao Yuehan said that it was alright, there probably shouldn’t be any problems. As he thought it over, he made his way to his usual desk and started to make notes while reading.

It was only half a month till his next match with Tia. According to the rules, Tia could create up to twenty machines this time round and the weapons could go up to grade eight. Furthermore, Ouyang Tao had not prepared any tactics against her.

Therefore, Ouyang Tao had no choice but to burn the midnight oil now. He hoped that he could complete a product as soon as possible, as he stayed at the weapon testing arena every afternoon to collect data and test results. At night, he would return to his dormitory to continue working in his laboratory.

Then, someone placed a cup of hot tea on Ouyang Tao’s desk. When he looked up, he realised that it was Zhao Yuehan: “Please enjoy.”

“Thank you senior, sorry for the inconvenience.” Lately, Zhao Yuehan found that Ouyang Tao was not very focused and hence, she prepared energy drinks for him. This made Ouyang Tao feel extremely thankful.

However, Zhao Yuehan did not turn and leave immediately. Instead, she looked at Ouyang Tao and softly uttered two words: “Form teams.”

“Eh? Team..... Ohh, are you referring to the battle group?”

“Yes.” Zhao Yuehan nodded, before saying something that completely shocked Ouyang Tao, “I want to join.”

At that moment, Ouyang Tao even questioned whether he had heard it wrongly.

According to what he knew, although Zhao Yuehan was a graduate student, due to her identity as grim reaper, she was not affected by scores and grades. Also, she enjoyed several special privileges.

To avoid misunderstandings, Ouyang Tao decided to verify once again: “Senior..... Did you say..... You wanted to join my battle group?”

“Yes.” Zhao Yuehan was very positive in her reply.

Zhao Yuehan’s battle capabilities had already been witnessed by Ouyang Tao. If she weren’t protecting him, she would not get injured for sure. He was absolutely certain of her strengths.

However, the problem laid in the fact that she was a graduate student. Each group could only apply to have one graduate student guide them and Ouyang Tao had decided that he would like to ask Chen Feng about it. (I guess leading the group and joining the group are two different things. That’s why Tia is able to lead them while he could also ask Chen Feng to guide them.)

Chen Feng battle capabilities was exceptional as well. Also, according to his tutor Lu Yun, Chen Feng had plenty of experience in battles. He could probably learn a lot from him.

More importantly, although Chen Feng was strong, due to the fact that he could not speak, it causes great trouble in communication. Therefore, people wouldn’t usually invite Chen Feng to join their teams. Also, Ouyang Tao was one of the few that did not need words and could rely on the changes in his expression to understand him.

Also, another reason why Ouyang Tao chose him was because he realised that

his group were all girls and if he did not have any male companionship, it would be too awkward.

Therefore, when Zhao Yuehan suddenly wanted to join, it made things a little difficult for Ouyang Tao and he could not outrightly reject her as well: "Then..... Senior, when we go on missions, what happens to the library?"

"Close it. It's okay once in awhile. Because only you visit." Zhao Yuehan's reply probably meant that since only Ouyang Tao came to the library to read, closing it once in awhile would not cause much inconvenience.

"But..... Can you go outside?"

"No worries. But need to increase restrictions."

This meant that Zhao Yuehan was able to go out under certain conditions.

Using his final excuse: "But Senior, you are a graduate student."

"No." Zhao Yuehan said, waving her hand slightly. This caused the file Ouyang Tao left on the table to be flipped to a certain page. Pointing to one of the introductions, she said: "I'm a first year."

Ouyang Tao took a careful look at the file and it did indeed write: Spirits Department first year, Zhao Yuehan. The picture was hers as well.

Big Sister, you can actually do that..... Your privileges are a little too much.

But Ouyang Tao calmed down quickly. Since Zhao Yuehan was not joining as a graduate student, it means that his plans could still be carried out. Having such a strong battle power is of no harm.

Hence, Ouyang Tao did not try to reject her anymore: "Alright, thank you senior."

The battle group had easily reached the minimum number of people required and the strength of the members were not weak at all. This made Ouyang Tao relax quite a bit.....

However, there was one person who was not satisfied, or in other words, had a big problem with it.

“What? ! Bro, what happened!”

“What’s wrong?”

“Why is it that other than you, all the other members are girls!”

That’s right, the person who was very unsatisfied with the turn of events was his sister, Ouyang Xue. When they were having lunch in the afternoon, Ouyang Xue had a very serious question about the name list for her brother’s battle group.

Concerning this, Ouyang Tao was very helpless as well: “Annie was recommended by you. Liu Xinya is her friend. Tia was the leader that Professor Lu had to persuade very hard to join us. Senior Zhao Yuehan, is very strong and she offered to join us. I can’t possibly reject her.”

However, even though Ouyang Tao gave her sufficient reasons, he still could not accept the situation: “No! I disagree, only having one male which is you, I can’t accept such a situation! Isn’t..... Isn’t this like..... Like.....”

“Like what?”

How could a girl say something like royal harem.

Correction. Someone was not embarrassed to say it. That person was Tia: “Why is it other than you, the other members are all girls? Are you forming a royal harem? Disgusting.”

In the evening, she had met Ouyang Tao at the weapon testing arena coincidentally and asked about the issue. In the end it turned out like this.

“Ehh, don’t make it sound so bad, didn’t I say that I would ask Senior Chen Feng to join when he comes back? Furthermore, the members of the team aren’t fixed yet.”

“Hmph..... Forget It..... That’s not important. Since that’s the case, quickly go submit your application form.”

“Isn’t the deadline in two months? Why the rush?”

“There’s a mission.” Tia said in a tone that did not allow questioning “as I am your leader, you have to listen to my instruction.”

What the hell? Ouyang Tao was completely confused by what she said.

However, what made him glad was that Tia seemed to have walked out of what was making her sad the previous day and returned back to normal.

Since she was his leader, he had to trust her.

Translator’s notes: I had always used leader when describing Tia in the team, but reading this chapter, I think she adopts more of a strategist/leader role and does not involve in battle as Ouyang Tao was able to apply for Chen Feng to guide them still. Her actual role would probably be confirmed when they go out for a mission so I shall keep the phrase for her as leader for now.

Volume 2 Chapter 6.5

Concerning the analysis of the imitation of Lucifer's Crown, Lu Yun already had a conclusion. The council held a meeting immediately to hear the findings of his report.

In the meeting room, over twenty council members were fully focused on listening to the report Lu Yun was making. Their attitude was serious because the aftermath of the issue needed to be handled with care.

"..... In summary, I conclude that the Lucifer's Crown is actually like a power storage system. It is charged by the original or by a demon king and is able to be used repeatedly. Also, there is a possibility for it to be mass produced. End of report." Lu Yun concluded his speech and waited for the next decision of the council.

This conclusion was very frightening as it meant that there was a possibility of there being much more imitations. If one Edward already caused such a commotion, who knows what another ten or twenty of them would do?

Other than that, the next frightening inference Lu Yun made was that he figured the creation of this imitation might have relied on the power of other Demon King relic. For example Asmodeus's spear and Samael's boots, or even both.

If Lucifer's crown could be imitated, going by the same logic, other demon king relics could be made as well. This was a fact that was hard to accept.

Facing such a tough situation, the council members sat down and discussed

for half an hour but were still unable to come to a satisfactory conclusion. Lu Yun was also similarly nervous while waiting.

The main point of contention amongst the council members was whether they wanted to release news of this to warn their allies. However, doing so would no doubt cause a big buzz and create mass panic.

If that were the cause, it would be helping the inverted cross army — — Because mass terror and panic was what a terrorist group like inverted cross army wanted to see.

However, if they withhold information regarding the situation, they would be allowing the inverted cross army free reign to do what they want and the outcome was unimaginable.

After half an hour of continued discussion, Lu Yun opened his mouth: “Distinguished members of the council, I have a suggestion.”

“Please speak.”

“From what I have analysed, creating this imitation requires a very special material — — Lula Ore. This mineral can refine the purest of energy stones and only the alloys created by these energy stones can withstand the stored energies of sin.”

The council soon understood what Lu Yun was trying to say: “Ahh, Professor Lu, your suggestion, is extremely useful.”

“That’s right, we only need to send a few of our magician army and student battle groups to our country’s and neighbouring countries’ Lula mining area to investigate. For the other countries, we could also warn them through our foreign affairs department.”

“Right.” Therefore, the council followed this suggestion and discussed for the next ten minutes before coming to a conclusion.

“Alright, Professor Lu. The council has decided to sent our student battle groups to five different Lula mining area to investigate. We will put you in charge of the allocation of manpower and the technical research.”

“Roger.” During the conversation, Lu Yun had already decided on who to send on this mission.

Out of the five mining areas in the country, two of them were near borders and another in mountainous areas. These were the ones that were more difficult to investigate and more dangerous. Therefore, Lu Yun decided to send out the most elite teams to investigate these regions.

The remaining two areas were located and two industrial towns near the capital. Furthermore, there were Magician’s from the army on standby at those locations. Hence, they were relatively safer.

Maybe, this would be a great opportunity to train the soldiers. From what Lu Yun saw, this exercise could act as a mini drill for the students. It was about time to allow the students to experience the feeling of actual battles.

Chapter 60

Chapter 7 The first simple mission

Even before completing the registration for the battle group, Ouyang Tao did not expect to already have a mission. When receiving the search mission in Lu Yun's office, he seem rather flustered.

"Professor Lu, my team only has five people or at most six..... Letting me go on a mission like this..... Isn't this..... Can't we wait for Senior Chen Feng to come back....."

"What, don't you trust me?" Tia, who also received the mission at the same time seemed a little unhappy. "Such a simple mission, me alone would be enough. Professor's true intention is to let you experience what is it like executing a real mission."

"That's right. It's just as Tia has said. This is the true objective behind why I'm letting you go on this mission." Lu Yun nodded, speaking to Ouyang Tao in a more serious manner. "Tia can only lead your team for a year, and in the future, the leader would definitely have to be you. Time is short, so you have to take whatever opportunities present to learn how to lead your battle group. Do you understand?"

Hearing that, Ouyang Tao understood immediately. It was just like Lu Yun had said. What he was lacking the most now was time. He needed to get his basics right and shorten the gap of experience in the shortest amount of time. Naturally, he needed to act at every chance given: "Yes Professor, I understand."

"Very good, I will give you two days to prepare for the mission. After that, head to Black Steel Town. You will have one week to execute your mission. Are there anymore questions?"

“Yes.” It was Tia and not Ouyang Tao who spoke, “Professor, may I..... Request for external assistance?”

Feeling that Tia was a little contradictory, Ouyang Tao questioned her immediately: “EH? Didn’t you just say that you could settle it alone? Why do you require external assistance?”

Lu Yun was equally puzzled as he raised his brows: “About external assistance..... We could, but I need to know who the other party is.”

“The fifth squad leader of the Magician’s Army, Rem Fayol.”

“Ahh..... Him.....” Lu Yun had been Tia’s tutor for five years, therefore, he knew some of the little secrets his students had. Instantly, he understood the reason she requested for it. “Alright, I agree. However Tia, I must remind you, mission first.”

“Yes!”

“So happy? Why?”

Ouyang Tao did not understand why Tia’s mood seemed to be lifted after Lu Yun had accepted her request for external assistance. She revealed an exceptionally bright smile that Ouyang Tao had never seen until now — — It was merely external assistance, why does she seem to have become another person?

Lu Yun just smiled and did not answer clearly: “Okay, Ouyang Tao. Don’t ask things that you don’t need to know. Quickly go and prepare for the mission.”

The two days of preparation was rather nerve-racking to Ouyang Tao. That’s because he did not even know the basics of battle preparation. Therefore, he rushed to the library to find books related to mission and battle preparation and prepared a checklist based on the items suggested by the various books.

“Maps, travel pass, signal flares.....” Ouyang Tao muttered to himself while he

recorded down on his checklist.

There really were many things to be brought for a mission. On his checklist, there were already fifty to sixty items. Afraid that he would miss out something, after noting down the items on his checklist, he carefully checked the books again.

There were so many things to bring that it could easily fill up everyone's bag pack. Then, Ouyang Tao suddenly realised a serious problem — How was he going to bring his materials?

When a Mechanical Engineering Magician carries out his mission, he would have to bring at least ten tonnes of materials. Ten Tonnes!!! So much materials, where was he going to keep it and how was he going to bring it?

"Going on a mission?" Zhao Yuehan's voice suddenly rang and lucky for Ouyang Tao, he had gotten used to it.

"Yeah....." Looking up, he saw Zhao Yuehan in front of him carrying a tray.

"Eh? Senior, this is....."

"Dinner time." As Zhao Yuehan spoke, she placed the bowl of hot piping noodles that was on her tray in front of Ouyang Tao.

The bowl of noodles placed in front of him was actually a chicken soup noodle. The aroma of the golden soup was overflowing. Looking at the noodles boosted Ouyang Tao's appetite: "Thank you senior. Wahh, it's so fragrant."

"Eat." Zhao Yuehan said as she waved her hand. The books in front of Ouyang Tao were all bookmarked and kept properly aside. "Don't dirty the books."

"Alright." Ouyang Tao used his chopsticks to pick up some noodles and cooled them by blowing.

“Slurppppppp” He ate some noodles, before taking a bite of the chicken drumstick in the bowl. The noodles were springy, the soup was fresh and the chicken was tender. It was extremely delicious. “Senior, your cooking is so good!”

“It’s fine as long as you like it.” Zhao Yuehan said as she looked at the books and notes Ouyang Tao was busy with. “Mission? When?”

“Ohh, two days later. We are to go investigate the Lula Ore Mining area at Black Steel Town.”

“.....” Zhao Yuehan did not answer but merely stared at Ouyang Tao.

Ouyang Tao understood that everytime she does that, it means that she had something to say: “Senior, what’s wrong?”

“Unable to attend, recommend a substitute.”

“Ugh..... Does senior mean that you are unable to go and would like to recommend another person to place you?”

“Yes.” Zhao Yuehan nodded. “My twin brother, Zhao Yuecheng, Nature department first year.”

This was the first time Ouyang Tao knew that Zhao Yuehan had a twin brother, but she trusted in her recommendation: “Alright, thank you once again senior.”

“You still look uncertain?”

“Ugh..... Yeah, Senior, do you know how Mechanical Engineering students bring along materials when they go for mission?”

“Dimensional Scroll, able to use anytime.”

“Dimensional Scroll?” Hearing the words scroll, Ouyang Tao recalled the young

girl from Medicines who went to find him the other time.

“Yes.” Zhao Yuehan said, stretching out her left hand, three scrolls and a mini booklet floated onto the writing desk. “The finished scrolls and instructions. Take a look.”

Thank you was already insufficient to express Ouyang Tao’s gratitude to this senior who has been constantly taking care of him.

After leaving the library and just as he walked down the stairs, Ouyang Tao saw someone standing below. Soon, he realised that the other party was Liu Xinya.

“Hello.” She walked forward with a smile, stopping around five steps away from Ouyang Tao and bowed before continuing: “I heard from Annie that your group was going to go for a mission soon. I guessed that you might require this.”

As she spoke, Liu Xinya held out three scrolls in her hands.

From the symbol on the ribbons on the scroll, Ouyang Tao could guess the type of scroll it was, however, he felt that it was different from the one Zhao Yuehan gave him.

“Is this a Dimensional Scroll?”

“Yes, it is a dimensional scroll that has been modified by me. It consumes two-thirds less magical powers than a normal scroll.” Liu Xinya explained. “I hope to take this opportunity to display my skills and be able to join your battle group.”

“Which means to say..... You would like to participate in the mission?”

“Yes, I hope that you would allow.”

Since Professor Lu has already said that this would be a simple mission where the main objective was to gain experience, bringing more people should not be a problem. Furthermore, a Pharmacist who specialised in scrolls would be

beneficial as well. Therefore, after some consideration, Ouyang Tao accepted: "Alright, two days later, come along with Annie."

"Thank you. I shall now take my leave." Liu Xinya courteous bowed before turning and leaving.

Graceful, calm. Such were the feeling he had gotten from her. She seemed to be much more reliable than Annie.

Suddenly, Ouyang Tao had an idea. Why not ask Annie to make a few scrolls as well?

Chapter 8 Very Nervous, Extremely Nervous

Two days later, 6:30 a.m. At the designated gathering point.

Ouyang Tao had already arrived at 6a.m. His large backpack was filled with all the necessities. He was feeling very nervous, but it was not only because it was his first mission.

Following that, Ouyang Xue, Annie and Liu Xinya all arrived within a quarter of an hour with all their luggage.

Following that, Tia also appeared a few minutes later. She was not alone but instead accompanied by a tall and handsome blonde man. From far, they could be seen holding hands and were walking very slowly. It was clearly different from what it had usually been.

More importantly, there was a radiant smile on Tia's face. It was a typical shy smile that was filled with happiness.

The man was wearing a Magician's Army uniform. He looked spirited and very suited with Tia. The sweet feelings between the two were indescribable, allowing Ouyang Tao to finally understand why Tia requested for additional "external assistance".

Ouyang Tao was not a person who enjoyed gossip and hence, he pretended as though he did not see anything and avoided looking at them. It was also obvious that Tia did not want the others to know about this relationship and they let go of each other's hands when they were thirty to forty metres away. After slightly touching up, they reverted to their original expression.

“Guys, this is General Rem from the Magician’s Army. He is also a graduate of Augustus Academy and a senior I highly respect. For this mission, he will be our ‘external assistance’.” Tia introduced.

Following which, Rem slightly interacted with the rest. From his first impression, Ouyang Tao felt that he was nice. He possessed both a soldier’s fortitude and sturdiness and also a gentleman’s humility and manners.

The only problem lied in the fact that Ouyang Tao felt he gave off some sense of incongruity.

At that point, it had just hit 6:30 p.m. and the last member also appeared.

Zhao Yuehan was in her usual white laced dress, but what was different from usual was that she wore a hat that had a face veil. She was leading along a young boy who was slightly shorter than her.

The youth wore a large eye mask which nearly covered half of his face. The mask prevent people from seeing his expressions clearly. He stood beside Zhao Yuehan quietly, not uttering a word.

Although they did not talk, everyone was able to deduce their relationship. Both of them had extremely pale white skin and they gave off a similar aura. The youth’s sense of attire was similar to Zhao Yuehan as he wore long black pants with his pure white shirt.

Putting it bluntly, he looked as though he was going to attend a funeral. Everyone felt a chilly oppression at the same time.

“Twin brother, Zhao Yuecheng.” Zhao Yuehan pushed her brother forward “He will join the team for the mission.”

“Hello.” Zhao Yuecheng walked forward as he revealed a friendly smile and shook Ouyang Tao’s hand.

From this simple act, Ouyang Tao could feel that the personalities of the siblings were different. Therefore, he held out his hand to return the gesture: “Hello. Welcome to our team.”

“I cannot see but I can feel your presence, I will be joining you for this trip.”

“Ahh, Thank you.”

The meeting with the other members were pleasant but Zhao Yuehan kept on staring at Rem.

Ouyang Tao knew that such a situation meant that she had found out something. However, she did not say anything but instead only walked beside Zhao Yuecheng and whispered something to him: “You must be obedient, alright?”

“Of course sis.” Zhao Yuecheng replied happily.

“Very good. Farewell.” As she spoke, Zhao Yuehan left.

Only after this young lady from Spirits had left could the rest other than Ouyang Tao and Zhao Yuecheng breathe normally — Obviously, other than the two of them, no one was able to withstand the special sort of aura coming from Zhao Yuehan.

“This fellow..... He really is capable of recruiting just about anyone.....” Tia whispered silently.

She had naturally heard of the rumours of Zhao Yuehan before. But more importantly, she had personally witnessed her abilities before — On the battlefield.

It was nearly a hopeless battle. Tia and a few other battle groups had nearly used up all of their materials and their magic had been depleted. While they were still recovering from previous attacks, the enemy surrounded them and attacked with ten thousand troops — There was only one fate for them,

death.

Tia still remembered that more than hundred of them had already prepared highly explosive magical bombs in an attempt to perish together with their enemies.

However, at that time, Zhao Yuehan appeared. She was floating just like a spirit. After which, a miracle happened. It might be better to say a natural calamity had befallen on them.

Snow, in the scorching hot July. Snowflakes suddenly appeared in the middle of the sky. The noisy battlefield fell silent instantly. A deathly silence surrounded the area.

When the snowfall had stopped, Tia and the rest of the people who climbed out of the snow had shockingly realised that all their enemies had turned into white bones. Zhao Yuehan merely turned around and eerily floated away.

That was a scene that Tia would never forget.

“Big Sister, are you afraid?”

“Eh?”

Zhao Yuecheng’s words brought Tia back into reality.

“My sister is not the entity that you imagine her to be.”

“You..... Are you peeking into my thoughts?” Tia instantly became more cautious and stepped back several steps.

Zhao Yuecheng did not seem to mind and merely smiled and explained: “Your breathing, heartbeat, flow of blood..... I can feel them. As i had said before, I cannot see, therefore I am able to feel such things. You don’t have to worry, I don’t have the same ability as my sister.”

“Ohhh..... Okay.....” Truthfully speaking, Tia was very scared. The two siblings gave off a very similar aura.

“I think that the most important thing is that we are partners, right? You are the leader. I will follow big sister’s instructions.”

“Yeah, okay.” Tia barely managed to compose herself and she continuously reminded herself that Zhao Yuecheng was completely different from his sister who was a death reaper. However, she could not completely suppress the fear in her heart. “Alright, since everyone is here and have already been acquainted with one another, let’s set off.”

Sitting in the bus that the school had specially provided, the team made their way towards Black Steel Town — — The industrial city was a ten hour ride from the capital and the mining area that they were going to investigate was merely two hours at most from the city.

This vehicle that was exclusively used for missions, had its exterior reinforced. The wheels of the vehicle were also made of a special magical rubber that was bullet and explosion proof. The interior of the vehicle was large and it could be modified to suit different missions. Currently, the vehicle was on autopilot while Tia briefed the team on the mission.

Based on what Tia had said, they only needed to place the detector at the various mining spots inside the mine. The detector would detect for abnormalities in the mine. At the same time, they were supposed to obtain the records of transactions of Lula Ores in the mine and bring it back to the academy for the professionals to investigate. If all goes well, it would take them at most four days for the whole mission.

“..... Everyone, this is a rough summary of our mission. Just like what I have said, it is only a simple mission.”

Yes. Just like this, Ouyang Tao had embarked on his first simple mission.

However, he was still extremely nervous.

At this point, Zhao Yuecheng gently held Ouyang Tao's sweaty palm and gently said: "No need to worry, death is here with us." (What a way to calm Ouyang Tao LOL)

Chapter 9 First Night In Black Steel Town

Black Steel Town was an industrial city and also a trading centre. The Town's name came because they were famous for producing a world renowned material — Black Steel.

Black Steel was unbelievably hard, flexible and malleable. Having a material that possess such properties, Black Steel Town's steel refinement factory made up to billions of dollars worth of orders each year.

Following the large monetary remuneration obtained from the work, the whole city had become a trading centre where large amounts of transactions were carried out. High rise buildings, busy streets and numerous people that came in preparation to spend — People. They were the most important assets.

The people in the city would rather name it opportunity town instead.

There were millions of work opportunities, countless business opportunities and people holding hopes to strike it rich. Various business elites come to this city to pursue this hope and dream.

Such opportunities would only befall the lucky few and it is only them that would make it.

Even though it was a city that was prosperous, it still had its own dark side. Perhaps it would be more appropriate to say that the dark side of this city was scarier due to the prosperity of the city.

Criminal Syndicate — Their existence were an open secret to the residence

living in Black Steel Town. Over half of the ‘miracles’ that happen in the city had a direct relation to this dark existence. The officials had also tolerated them to a certain extent. (Miracles refer to the poor who strike it rich in the city)

It was inevitable that anyone who was entering the city for the first time would undoubtedly be absorbed by what they saw. Ouyang Xue was one of them.

“Wah, that building is so tall! Is it the tallest building here?”

“That building is called Steel Sky Stairs. However, it is not the tallest here. At most, it is one of the tallest here.”

“Ahhh! That that! That building can’t really be floating in the middle of the sky right!”

“Black Steel Town’s Magician Tower, not only can it float, it can fly as well.”

For a young girl who lived in a seaside village for more than ten years and only had nature to see, Black Steel Town was like a whole new world. Ouyang Xue sat excitedly beside the window while Annie said beside her like a tour guide explaining everything to her.

However, Ouyang Tao was exceptionally calm. It would be more appropriate to say that he was exceptionally nervous. He kept opening his backpack to check his belongings, before closing it and opening it to check a while later..... He repeated this several times during the journey.

“You are too nervous.” Tia had already said this numerous times already, “I have already said that we are only going to the hotel to rest today. Rem and I will go to the mining company to make some introductions. We will start our mission tomorrow.”

“Yes, I know.....” Ouyang Tao nodded, but his hand continued shaking.

“Eh, I have never seen you like this before.....” Tia gave up persuading him and helplessly shook her head.

Ouyang Tao's reaction seemed very weird for her. He did not seem anything like the kid who had used all his abilities to force a draw against her during their first match. The Ouyang Tao now looked like a completely useless coward.

Tia had completely given up on persuading him. It was normal for him to be nervous on his first mission. Luckily, it was merely a simple mission.

The hotel which they rested in was situated in the centre of the business district. They had reserved a total of three rooms but there were seven people. Therefore, there were some troubles in splitting the rooms.

"Rem and I would be in a room. The two guys would be in another. The three ladies would have to squeeze a bit and take a room together." The room allocation based on what Tia had said sounded very logical.

However, Zhao Yuecheng had another suggestion: "I guess, most people would not want to stay with me. Big sis, I applied for funds for a single room already."

"Oh..... " Tia thought about it and agreed with what Zhao Yuecheng had said. Zhao Yuecheng gave off a chilly and weird aura. Staying in the same room as him would no doubt make someone restless. "Alright, I agree. However, you would have to stay nearby."

"Okay, then I shall go and book a room." As he spoke, Zhao Yuecheng went downstairs alone — Although he was blind, it was obvious that his movements were not affected at all.

Truthfully speaking, Tia still could not adapt to the unique aura coming from Zhao Yuecheng. He was different from the emotionless Zhao Yuehan as he constantly kept a smile on his face. However, Tia felt that the smile was exceptionally eerie.

Luckily, Zhao Yuecheng seemed to understand this as well. Furthermore, they were currently allies.

“Then I want to be in a room with bro!” Zhao Yuecheng had just left and Ouyang Xue was already hugging her brother’s elbow, “Is it ok, bro~”

Now that it was two people per room, Ouyang Tao felt that siblings sleeping in the same room was very normal and hence agreed, “Well..... Alright.”

“Hehe, that’s great~”

“If that is the case, go to your respective rooms to rest. Don’t sleep too late. We will gather at the canteen downstairs at 6 a.m. tomorrow morning for a brief.”

Hence, everyone left for their respective rooms.

Although it was their first mission, it felt more like an excursion to Ouyang Xue — Especially since she could be in the same room as her brother.

After searching around the room, Ouyang Xue had lost interest in the dangers of the room. She then realised that Ouyang Tao was still checking his backpack.

Ouyang Tao was very nervous, however, his nervousness did not come from the mission itself.

Suddenly, a soft and warm body stuck itself to his back: “Eh, bro. You have already checked several times.”

Ouyang Xue stuck herself to her brother’s body as body her hands hugged his neck — The situation was not right. Ouyang Tao slapped his sister’s hand gently: “Alright Ah Xue, stop fooling around, this is important.”

“Seriously bro, it’s rare that we come out. Why don’t you accompany Ah Xue?” Not only did Ouyang Xue not have any intention of letting go, she started gently rubbing Ouyang Tao. “Ever since bro entered the academy, you don’t accompany me anymore. Do you know how sad Ah Xue is?”

“Ugh..... Sorry.....” Hearing this, Ouyang Tao felt sorry for his sister. After entering Augustus Academy, he focused on his research and studies. Due to the busy schedule every day, he did not have much time to accompany his sister.

“Bro, don’t you miss me at all? Could it be that in bro’s heart, Ah Xue cannot even compare to those cold hard machines?” Ouyang Xue voice possessed some sort of resentment causing Ouyang Tao to feel slightly guilty.

Thinking back, he had almost always accompanied by his sister’ side. He took care of nearly all her food and lodging. Nowadays, however, it was even rare that he had a meal with his sister.

“Sorry, Ah Xue. Bro will find some time to accompany you in the future alright?”

“No!” However, Ouyang Xue suddenly became quite stubborn. “I don’t want such an assurance, I want bro to accompany me now.”

“Hehe, aren’t we together now.” As he spoke, Ouyang Tao could feel that his sister’s actions were becoming much bolder. The young girl was rubbing her Siamese twins/Double Whoppers/Congo Bongos through two layers of clothing on his back. It was undoubtedly quite unbearable for a man at the prime of his youth. (I didn’t know which sounded better so I’ll just put all!)

Ouyang Tao repeatedly reminded himself that they were siblings as he tried to get his sister to loosen her grip. However, Ouyang Xue hugged even tighter.

However, Ouyang Xue said something rather mean: “Bro, we actually don’t have any blood relations right?”

“Right..... But I treat you as my sister all this while.”

“Is that all?” Ouyang Xue place her hands near the neck opening of Ouyang Tao’s shirt and slowly roamed downwards. “All these time you only treat me as your sister?”

To Ouyang Tao, this question was extremely impactful as he could not answer immediately.....

Volume 2 Chapter 9.5

Interval 3

Two days ago, when Ouyang Tao obtained the dimensional scrolls, he had a sudden idea. Although Annie specialised in medicines, if Liu Xinya did indeed have talent in scrolls, there was no harm in adding her to the team. Bringing such a curious attitude, Ouyang Tao sent a message to her using the multi-purpose crystal ball and quickly received a reply: "I'm at my lab."

Coming to Annie's laboratory again, it was still the same pungent medicinal smell that greeted him. He could not believe that Annie could stay in such an environment..... After Annie switched on the ventilation fan, Ouyang Tao finally walked in, Annie still maintained her business smile and greeted him at the door.

"Welcome boss. How may I help you?"

Is that really okay..... However, Ouyang Tao felt that this was not important now. He cleared his throat and said seriously: "Annie, you have received news that we are going on a mission two days later right?"

"Yeah, I know. Annie has already prepared. Please take a look." As she spoke, she took out a large baggage to show Ouyang Tao "Take a look, all the necessities have been prepared."

Ouyang Tao examined it and just as Annie had said, she had nearly prepared all the necessities already. Other than that, there were also several bottles of

medicines. These were all the crucial preparations a Pharmacist had to make — — Ouyang Tao thought about it and felt that it was right. No matter what, Annie was more experienced than Ouyang Tao in missions.

“Annie, do you have Dimensional Scrolls?”

“EH? Dimensional Scrolls? I do..... But..... Ugh.....” Annie lowered her head as she spoke and revealed a very helpless look, “But..... My scrolls..... Do you really want it?”

Seeing Annie’s look, Ouyang Tao was confused. Annie seemed to highly doubt the scrolls she made: “What’s the problem? Could it be that you don’t know how to make scrolls?”

Annie hesitated a long while before saying: “Ughh..... This..... This..... I cannot say clearly, but if you really want it..... Follow me.”

Annie took out a key and opened a room in her laboratory. It was a small room that was around ten metres square large.

Entering the room, what was most striking was an antique cloth weaver. The four walls of the room were filled with neat shelves. On three of these shelves were neatly placed scrolls tied using a ribbon. On the last shelf were various threads and ribbons, arranged by size.

Although Ouyang Tao knew that the scrolls were made using cloth, he had never imagined that the cloth would be hand made.

Out of curiosity, Ouyang Tao asked her: “Annie, the decorations on the scroll can’t be hand sewed as well?”

“Of course they are. They are an important part of the scroll.” As she spoke, she tipped and stretched for one that was on top.

“Let me help you.” Ouyang Tao said as he carried Annie from behind. He wasn’t certain whether it was due to her small stature, but Annie was very light.

He felt as though he was carrying a child — — Speaking of which, how did she place in on top usually?

“Ahhh, Thank you. These are the scrolls.” Annie removed three scrolls and passed it to Ouyang Tao. “These are the dimensional scrolls, but I advise you not to use it.”

“Why?”

“I’m not sure myself, but people always say my scrolls have a problem. Nowadays, I’m nearly unable to carry on with my scroll business. A lot of my customers no longer come to me. It’s a huge loss..... *Sob Sob*.....” As she spoke, Annie was about to cry.

However, Ouyang Tao was also very confused. Because the scrolls that Annie gave her looked exactly like the ones Zhao Yuehan gave her. What could be the problem?

It was regretful that he did not know anything about them. Therefore, he had to look for an expert opinion.....